

P.L. 5452
A SHORT and COMPENDIOUS

METHOD

FOR

19 c 1
Learning to Speak, Read, and Write,

THE

ENGLISH and SPANISH Languages.

IN WHICH

Each PART OF SPEECH is separately treated of,
in a NEW MANNER.

WITH A

SYNTAX:

SUCH AS

Never before was published in any Grammar for
the modern Languages.

By *PETER PINEDA*, K

Teacher of the Spanish Language in London;

Who has corrected the Errors, and supplied the Defects of the First Impression, and added an *English* Grammar, for the Benefit of the *Spaniards*; also many Dialogues, and an *Hispanism*, never printed before. He also has taken away all the Examples, not only of Customs, but also of Religion, that could offend any Persons or Country.

The THIRD IMPRESSION, corrected and amended.

L O N D O N,

Printed for J. NOURSE in the Strand. 1762.



A L

Muy nòble y generòso Señòr,

El Señòr Don

CARLOS DOUGLAS,

Duque de Queensberry, duque de Dover, marques de Dumfrieshire, y Beverley, conde de Drumlangrig, y Sanquhar, visconde de Solway, Nith, Torthorwald, y Ross, lordo Douglas de Tinmont, Middlebie, y Dornock, y baron de Rippon.

POnèr èsta gramatica a los pies de
vuestra excelencia, es ofrenda,
que haze mi rendimiento, deuda que
reconoçe mi agradecimiento, y desem-

A 2

peño

peño de una obligaciòn precisa, porque si no hizièra assi fuera un ingrato, vicio, que los desconocidos ocultan, y los agradecidos, aborrecen, y nunc tuvo cabida en mi pecho.

Restituigo a V. Ex^a. una obra, que por tantas vias es justo que se llàme sùya, pues si miro a su principio, reconòsco, que V. Ex^a. me alentò, a que la emprendièsse, è imprimièsse segunda vez con aumentos, si atièndo a su progreso, devo el acierto de sus reglas a las dudas, que tan aguda y juiziosamente V. Ex^a. me proponia, y con mucha discrecion las soltàva, y finalmente si considèro el feliz lògro de su impressiòn, confièssò que lo devo al generoso pecho de V. Ex^a. pues fin el la obra se quedàra en embrion, el publico en ayunas, y salto
del

del beneficio, que de ella se le puède resultar, y no tan airofa: pues obra que mereció la atención y aprovación de V. Ex^a. no se contenta con limites menos dilatados, circunstancias, que enfrenarán a la embidia, la mas mordaz. A vista dellas, la murmuracion mas atrevida, y la mas sevèra critica, respetarán el voto de V. Ex^a. no solo por su antigua y noble sangre (que siendo en muchos lo mas, en V. Ex^a. es lo menos) mas aun por las infinitas y raras prendas, que su divina magestad se dignò dotar a V. Ex^a. que son reálzes de su noblèza, gloria de su patria, y assunto que venèra el universo, y acàta la admiración que muda enfálza mas, que si hablàra.

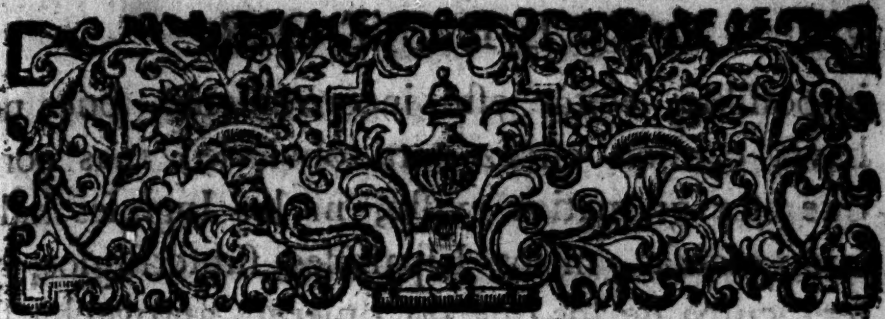
Guarda

Guarde Dios a V. Ex.^a y a su noble familia infinitos años en perfecta salud y en su grandeza, como desseo, y he menester,

Excelentissimo Señor,

B. l. p. d. V. E.

PEDRO PINEDA.



A L

LECTOR.

QUisiera ingenioso lector seas, ó no amigo, que esta gramática sea de tu gusto, pues el mio no a sido otro, que hazer bien al publico, porque se muy bien, que los Ingleses, como curiosos, y entendidos la necesitan, y los Españoles tambien, para instruirse en la lengua Inglesa, que no es menos elegante, y provechosa, que qualquiera otra, de toda la Europa. He compuesto este libro, digo, para aprovechar a entrambas, naciones a fin que puedan comunicarse sin interprete, tanto, en el trato civil, y politico, como en el mercantil.

Gran mengua es en un hombre de buenas partes y entendido, servirse de interprete, para declarar su pensamiento a otro; porque no ay secreto, si interviene una tercera persona, y era imposible,

imposible, evitâr este inconveniente, pues no havia camino eficâz para obviârle; mas aora que esta gramatica existe, ni los Ingleses hallaràn escusas, ni los Españoles subterfugios, y serà culpa de los que no quieren aprovecharse de ella, y dirè con justa razon, que la pereza, y plazer han tomado possession de ellos, pues pueden sin maestro, ser maestros de dichas lenguas en seis meses.

Se publicò una semejante el año 25. del mismo artifice, para el mismo intento, pero no tan exata, copiosa, y corregida, y no tuvo tanta cabida como yo deseava, con todo esso, hizo algun provecho, comunicandose la lengua Española, no solamente entre los mercaderes, mas aun entre los nobles Ingleses, por lo qual espero que èsta tendrà mas aplauso, y serà buscada, no solo de los Ingleses, mas aun de los Españoles, y de otras naciones; por ser mas aumentada, y corregida, que la primera.

Te ofresco el parto de mi entendimiento tal qual es, con animo sincero y desenteresado, y espero lo recibiràs con el mismo, porque, ni la vanidad de adquirir nombre de Autor, que aborresco, pues vale tanto, que esclavo de los
4 libreros,

libreros, ni tanpoco el provecho, que si fuera aun mas de lo que desear pudiera, fueran incentivos suficientes para empeñarme a hazer una obra tan seca como un esparto, y tan trabajosa, como un hombre de letras a experimentado.

No ignoro haver muchas gramaticas Españolas inciertas con el Ingles, ô Frances, mas dexo a los que las leyeron, y leyeren, esta, el juzgar si falta mucho de lo necesario en ellas, y si en esta se halla todo lo que estar deviera; el alabar yo esta no seria de mucha consecuencia, si ella misma no se defendiera, e hiziera ver al publico, que es la única.

He procurado no omitir nada que necesario fuese, y ser tan inteligible, y claro como el que mas, pues en las definiciones, divisiones, y demas cosas pertenecientes a una gramatica no excede en superfluidades, ni muy corta, para instruir suficientemente en lo necesario, fino corta y sucintamente explica las reglas, de tal manera, que uno de mediano entendimiento, en seis y meses podrá allanar las dificultades, y aprehender con el tiempo la lengua Española, ô Inglesa.

No he dado esta al publico, sin suficiente autoridad que la acredite, como son los siguientes gramáticos: el Padre Salas, el Padre Manuel, Antonio de Nebrixa, y Puerto Real, las obras de los quales, seria mas conveniente entregarlas a los versados en la lengua Española, que ponerlas en las manos de los principiantes, siendo muy confusas, como lo puede ver el que las leyere.

Por lo tocante a los exemplos, que en esta hallares, te aseguro, que los saqué de los siguientes autores, para formar muchas reglas, los quales han tenido mucha cabida entre los de la republica literaria, y son los siguientes: el docto Cobarrubias, el profundo Gracian, el agudo Cervantes, el leido Faxardo, el quimérico, y confuso Quevedo, el obscuro, y no entendido Góngora, el laconico Don Antonio de Solis, el grave Caldéron, y el maldiziente y pronto Lope de Vega carpio, todos los quales han sido guia y norte de esta mi obra.

Hallarás tambien una sintaxis, tal y nunca vista en ninguna gramatica Española, ni tampoco en ninguna otra, que por otras lenguas en publicado, digo tan regular, y perfecta, que uno,

uno, con algun cuidàdo, si sabe la gramàtica Latina, se perfeccionarà en la Española, è Inglesa, sin ayùda de maestro, solamente por la pronun-
ciación, que puede en una semana hazerlo con
mucha facilidad, si el maestro haze su devèr, y
el disipulo tambien.

No digo esto para acreditar la òbra, mas de lo
que ella merèsce, por tres razones, la primera,
por havèrme el gobièrno proveido en algo sin yo
merecerlo, a quien doy infinitas gracias ; la se-
gunda por no ser interesàdo ; y assi que se ven-
dàn muchas, ò no, no emporta ; y la tercera,
por havèr hallàdo al principe a quien esta obra
està dirigida tan generoso, tan asàble y humano,
que si la fortuna (como dixe otra vez) me hu-
vièsse sido tan propicia y favorable como pudi-
èra deseàr, sièndo ella tan caprichosa como el
mundo sabe, no sè si la trocàra, por la que me
hizo en darme a conoscièr al dicho principe, a
quien Dios guàrde infinitos años en compa-
nia de su noble familia segun su desseo, y el del
que te ofrèce èsta òbra ; repito segunda vez,
las gracias, y rendimièntos de los favores rece-
vidos, para dàr a entendèr al publico, que el
Pineda no es Sobervio, ni desagradescido, sino
muy

muy atento, y que no ay palàbras superfluas,
ni lisonjeras, en agradecer a los bienechòres
una, dos, tres, y mil vezes, segun su devèr, y el
de los agradescidos, y bien nascidos. Teruego,
si conòces al librero Pigmaleòn, erudito, bien
formado, y grànde como Sancho Panza, que
queria impedir la publicaciòn de esta gramàtica,
nò siendo nintòdo, ni parte le digas de mi parte,
pues vive en la calle llamada el——no muy
lexos del Convent-Garden, que no me cuido,
de sus embelecòs, ni se me dà un maravedi,
que aya, o no aya emprenta, ni tanpoco libre-
ros tales, viva pues mi señor del duque de
Queensberry y Christo con todos, Vale, si
vales, y sino, sin el.

B. l. m. d. l. q. f. f.

PEDRO PINEDA.



THE SPANISH GRAMMAR.



S no one can be supposed ignorant of the meaning of the word *grammar*, I shall not trouble myself, or my reader, with an unnecessary definition of it, but begin with the alphabet, which is as follows, viz.

A, a, b, c, d, e, f, g, h, i, j, k, l, ll, m, n, ñ, o, p, q, r, s, t, u, v, x, y, z.

But before I proceed, it is necessary to remark, that the Spanish language has only one accent, which is the grave, made use of to distinguish the various sounds of a particular letter, the terminations of verbs, and the different sense of one and the same word; without which accent whole periods would be unintelligible, as may be seen by the following examples: for, *amo, estimo, &c.* without the accent over the *o*, are in the first person of the indicative mood; but, when the *o* is accented, they are then in the third person of the preterperfect definite of the same mood; *baxia* and *baxia* are only

B

distin-

2 The Spanish Grammar.

distinguished by the accent; *bázia* signifies towards; and *baxia* is the preterimperfect of the indicative of the verb *baxer*: from whence may be concluded the great usefulness of this accent in the Spanish language, as may be seen in the works of *Gracian*, *Quevedo*, and *Covarruvius*; the tongue itself wanting but one accent.

Having made this (necessary) observation, I shall go on to give sure and certain rules for the pronunciation of each particular letter.

Pronunciation of the vowels.

A.

A never varies its sound, and is the same with the English *a*, in the words *call*, *wall*, *all*, &c.

E.

E, in the Spanish language, is both masculine and feminine; the former is accented, the latter not, as in these examples; look for Peter, *busque usted a Pedro*; I looked for Peter, *busqué a Pedro*. When the *e* is a conjunction copulative, it is also masculine, as *España è Italia*, *Francia è Ingalaterra*. In the first person, present tense, and indicative mood, of the verbs *haber* and *saber*, it is again masculine; *yo he*, *yo se*. In short, it is always so, when it is found accented; as in *amè*, *amarè*, *oirè*, *amemos*, &c. In the beginning of all nouns and verbs, when the *e* is followed by *a*, *b*, *c*, *d*, *f*, *h*, *p*, *q*, *r*, or *t*, it is pronounced like the above words; as, *èa*, *èbano*, *ècclesiastico*, *èdicto*, *èfeto*, *èlegia*, *èpistola*, *èquivoco*, *èrudicion*, *èternidad*. In the middle of a word it is generally masculine, as in *pacència*, &c. I give no examples of the *e* feminine, because it sufficiently declares

The Spanish Grammar.

3

declares itself, and I am unwilling to perplex the reader.

Of the vowels *i* and *y*.

All the grammarians tell us, that the *i* and *y* are pronounced alike; and give us *ingrato* and *yugo* for example; which (as they say) have no difference in the pronunciation: but in this they are mistaken, there being a wide difference in the pronunciation of these two words; for the *i* and *n* in *ingrato* make a syllable, and are pronounced together as such; but in the other word it is quite otherwise; for we divide the *y* into two *ii* in the true Spanish pronunciation, as if it were wrote *iiugo*, *yelo* as *iielo*, *leyes* as *leiiies*, the first of which we make a sort of half-syllable, and join the latter *i* to the syllable which follows. Having laid down this as a general and infallible rule, that I may give an entire knowledge of this pronunciation, and at the same time teach the orthography, I shall proceed to some exceptions. If then, an *i* follows a vowel, and is not followed by another, the *y* in such case is made use of, and is pronounced like the Latin *i*; viz. *pays*, *rey*, *ley*, &c. Words derived from the Greek, or any other foreign language, which have the *y* in the original, retain it in the Spanish, with the pronunciation of the Latin *i*, as *sylaba*, *hymno*, &c. and to write it otherwise would be committing a fault (considering the nature of the word) against the true orthography. The *y* is also pronounced like *i*, when it is put as a conjunction copulative; viz. *Pedro y Antonio*, &c. but if the initial letter of the word following the *y* be an *i*, the *y* must then be changed into *è*: Ex. *Pedro è Ignacio*, *España è Italia*,

lia, Francia è Ingalaterra; as will be more fully shewn, when we come to speak of the conjunctions.

O.

The letter *o* is pronounced alike in English and Spanish, as in these words, viz. *obstruction, opinion, &c.* Sometimes it is pronounced in the cavity of the mouth, as *cuerpo, veo*; but the pronunciation is always open in the third persons of the preterperfects definite, and before the letter *n*; viz. *amò, leiò, oiò*; *reputacion, ocasion, coraçon, &c.* This letter is very often an interjection, or a conjunction disjunctive; viz. *ò miserable de mi! ò si pudiera ir à Roma! Antonio ò Pedro, &c.* as we shall demonstrate in its proper place.

Of the u vowel.

When this vowel comes after the *g* or *q*, it is not pronounced, as in these words; *guerra* war, *Guillermo* William, *guia* a guide, *seguir* to follow; *guisa* a manner, custom, mode; *liquida* a liquid, *que* what, *quien* who, *aguila* an eagle, throughout the verb *querer*, and in the preterperfects definite of the indicative mood in verbs whose infinitive mood is terminated in *gar*; as *jugàr, juguè*; *jusgàr, jusguè*; to play, to judge: but the following are to be excepted from this rule; viz. *aguero* an omen, *aguero* a grandfather, *antiguedad* antiquity, *guero* an egg, *figuero* a stork, *Siguenza* the city of *Siguenza*, *alagueno* flattering, *piguelas* hawks jesses, *pedigueno* an importunate beggar or suitor, *reguendo* a belch, *vergüenza* shame, *unguento* ointment, *deguello* a beheading, *eloquente* eloquent, *cinquenta* fifty, *quenta* an account, a reckoning, *question* a question. To these

these exceptions add all words which have the *a* after the *u*, and the *g* or *q* before it; as, *agua* water, *aguàr* to water, *Guadalajara* a town so called, *guardian* a superior of the Capuchins, *guardia* the guard, *guardar* to keep, *qual* which, *quànto* how much, *quantia* a quantity, &c. in all which the *u* is pronounced like *ou*. Sometimes the *u* is a conjunction disjunctive, as we shall shew when we treat of the conjunctions, and then it is accented thus, *ù*.

Of the pronounciation of the consonants.

B and V.

The greatest part of those authors who have published Spanish Grammars, have fallen into the error of confounding the *b* and *v*, using them indifferently the one for the other, which is contrary to the true Castilian orthography: but to the end that this abuse may be rectified for the future, I shall establish infallible rules, and such as that language requires to be strictly observed. Remark then, that the Spaniards in pronouncing the *b* close the lips, and in the pronounciation of the *v* they bring the under lip to the teeth; which makes a vast difference in the sound of these two letters. The following rules will teach you not only to learn the true orthography, but also the difference between these two letters, which is of no small consequence.

The *b* is always put before the letter *l*, and both before and after the letter *r*, viz. *tàbla*, *abrìr*, *àrbol*; except however *perverso*, which must be always wrote with a *v*, and not a *b*.

All words which are derived from the Latin, retain their orthography in the Spanish; viz. *vinum* in

Latin, *vino* in Spanish; so *barba*, *barba*; Sp. *captivus*, *captivo*; but you must except those which have *aba* in the penultimate; for in such the *b* is changed into *v*; viz. *amabam*, *amava*, &c. This rule being well observed, there is no danger of committing faults in the orthography, or of confounding the *b* and *v*. Take notice, that the Spaniards change the Latin *p* into *b*; as, *sapere* in Latin, *saber* in Spanish; *sapiens* in Latin, *sabio* in Spanish, &c.

C.

The *c* is pronounced in Spanish, as in English, in the words *call*, *Cæsar*, *cinnamon*, *cotton*, &c.

D.

I shall only take notice, that the letter *d* always retains the same sound it has in English, as in Spanish, *Dios*, *Diego*, &c. but at the end of a word it is softened, as in *amistad*, *charidad*, *humildad*, &c.

F.

The *f* in Spanish is pronounced just as it is in English and French; but the Spaniards never double it, not even in words derived from the Latin in which there are two *f*'s: for example; *offendere* in Latin, is wrote *ofender* in Spanish; and this is the true Castilian orthography; for two *f*'s are never to be found in the works of any Spanish author of note.

G, J, X.

The letter *g* is commonly found in the middle of a word, before the *e* and *i*, and before them only it is guttural, as in *magestad*, *magistrado*, *magestuoso*, &c. But though I have said the *g* is guttural,

as are the *j jota*, and the *x*, yet take notice, that it has not so harsh a pronunciation as those two letters have; but, as it is impossible to paint a sound, I shall leave this to the master, whose business it is to pronounce it so often to his scholar, that he may, by the repetition, get the right pronunciation: this will save the giving many fanciful explanations; for it is impossible, by writing, to teach the pronunciation, though many have thought it a very easy matter.

The *j jota* is guttural, and is used before *a, o, e*; viz. *mojar, rempujon, ajustar, jamas, &c.* Take it for a general rule, that all words ending in *aja, ajo, eja, ojo, ija, ijo, oja, ojo*, must be wrote with a *jota*, as *mortaja, ventaja, navaja, trabajo, tajo, viaje, aparejo, consejo, viejo, cornija, sortija, bija, bijo, regozijo, oja, ridoja, despojo, endjo, &c.*

From those which terminate in *aja*, the following must be excepted: *baxa, faja, caxa*; and those verbs which have the infinitive in *ar*, with their adverbs, as *baxar, abaxo, debaxo*, which must be wrote with an *x*, and not with a *jota*.

Except from those ending in *eja, quexa, rexa, and dexa*.

From those in *ejo, dexo anexo, texo*, are to be excepted.

Fixa, and the imperative mood of the verb *fixar*, with *prolixa*, are to be excepted from words terminating in *ija*.

From words in *ijo*, exclude *fixo, bendixo*, with the adjective *fixa*, and its adverb *fixo*.

From the termination in *oja*, we except *aloxa, coxa, congòxa*.

And from those in *ojo*, except *floxò coxa, roxo*.

All words ending in *e* are wrote with a *g*, and never with an *x* or a *jota*; as, *salvage*, *pàge*, *estropàge*, *viàge*; excepting from this rule, *dixe* from the verb *dezir*, *tràxe*, y *truxe*, which, notwithstanding their being terminated in *e*, are always spelt with an *x*, and not a *g*.

All words which begin with an *x* are Arabick; as, *xàra*, *xàtiva*, *xavali*, *xavèga*, *xàula*.

You must remark, that when the *g* is placed before *n*, it is pronounced as in English, joining the *g* to the first syllable, viz. *magnanimous*, *Magdalen*, *magnifick*; in Spanish you must pronounce, *mag-nanimo*, *Mag-dalena*, *mag-nifico*; with this difference, that in Spanish *g* is not altogether so strongly pronounced as in English, but is somewhat softer.

H.

The *b* in Spanish is no better than an aspiration; and it is used either in imitation of the Latin, as in these words, *bòmbre*, *humildad*; or to shew, that the following letter is a vowel, as *hùmo*, *bièrro*, *buèrto*, *buèssò*, *buevo*, *buèsped*; in which it is pronounced stronger than in the words *bòmbre*, *humildad*, &c.

K.

The Spaniards make no use of this letter, but in the words *kalendas*, *kalendario*; and in these it is rather to conform themselves to the nature of the word, than out of any necessity; for they write the same words with a *c*; and it is no fault in Spanish orthography to write them indifferently with either *k* or *c*.

L, ll.

The Spanish have the simple and the double *l*, and

The Spanish Grammar.

9

and both are pronounced alike: Ex. for the simple, *land, lay, leaf, libel, &c.* Ex. for the double, *to allure, allured, alluring, a million, stallion, &c.* The French or English never begin a word with *ll*, which is very common in Spanish; as, *llover*, read *liover*: they also make use of it in the middle of a word; as, *fellar* to seal; *callar* to be silent, &c.

M.

The letter *m* has the same pronunciation in Spanish, as it has in English. There is this to be observed; that the English has many words which are wrote with *mm*, and the Spanish has not any; for it changes the first *m* into *n*; for example, *commiseration*, in Spanish *conmiseracion*; and so of the rest.

N.

The Spanish language has two *n*'s, which are pronounced alike both in English and Spanish: the one has this mark *ñ*, and is called *ñ con tilde*; Ex. *nail, name, nettle, nice, never, new, newly, news, &c.*

P.

The letter *p* is pronounced as in English, as *publick, publico; people, pueblo; Paul, Pablo*. Observe that it is never doubled in the Spanish language.

The *p* being followed by an *h*, in words derived from the Greek, changes its natural pronunciation for that of the *f*, as it does in English; viz. *philosofo, filosofia, &c. philosopher, philosophy*, in English; but such words may also be wrote with an *f*, without committing any fault in the Spanish orthography.

2

10 The Spanish Grammar.

The letter *q* is the same in Spanish as in English, either in regard of the pronunciation or orthography.

R.

The *r* is pronounced in Spanish as it is in English; viz. *rebel*, *rebelde* in Spanish; *rarity*, *raridad* in Spanish; *reality*, *realidad* in Spanish.

S.

The *s* is pronounced (either single or double) in the same manner as in English; viz. *sack*, *saca*; *session*, *sesion*, *a session*; *abbels*, *abadessa*, *countess*, *condessa*, &c.

T.

I need only say, that this letter is pronounced as in English, excepting only that it has never the sound of the *t*; as it has in these English words, *action*, *contraction*, *faction*, &c.

The diphthongs are formed of two vowels joined together in one syllable, and are pronounced as one letter: they are as follow; *ay*, *ey*, *ie*, *io*, *iu*. Examp. *ayre*, hair; *ley*, law; *piedra*, stone; *Dios*, God; *ciudad*, city.

Of the ARTICLES.

AN article is a declinable particle, and precedes the word to which it is joined. Articles are divided into definite and indefinite. The Spanish language has three definite, and two indefinite, as I shall

I shall shew, when I have, by examples, made these terms easy and familiar to those who are unacquainted with grammar. To this end, I shall first speak of the English articles, and hope to make the meanest capacity conceive me. The English has two articles, *the* and *a*; the latter, when it comes before a word beginning with a vowel, for the ease and sound of the pronunciation, takes an *n*; as for example, *an ox*, *an ass*: and it is the same when it is joined to a word beginning with an *h*, *an house*, &c. some few words excepted, &c. Of these two articles the one is definite; that is, determinate, pointing out some particular and individual thing or person; the other, indefinite, or general: *the* is the definite article, *a* the article indefinite: for example; if I say, I bought *the* house, I refer to some particular house, which has been before-mentioned, or of which the person to whom I speak has some notice; for otherwise it would be natural to desire an explanation; as, what house? &c. but if I say, I have bought *an* house, I speak in general, and point out no particular house. If in directing a person, I say, that corner house is *the* house, the person would be instructed; but should I say, that corner house is *an* house, it is probable, he'd ask, who doubted it? I saw *the* king: if I am in France, it would be supposed the article *the* defines the king of France; but if I say *a* king, I define no particular king; and it may as well be the king of England as the king of France. As I believe these examples sufficient, I shall go on to the Spanish articles; which are, as I have said, five in number; viz. three definite or determined; one masculine, *el*; one feminine, *la*; one neuter, *lo*.

The two indefinite articles are *de* and *a*, which are indifferently used before any gender, either in the singular or plural; viz. *a Pedro*, *a Maria*, *a lo bueno*, *a los hombres*, *a las mugeres*. Observe, that the neuter article *lo* has no plural, but in that number it becomes masculine; viz. *lo bueno* in the singular, makes *los buenos* in the plural.

Declension of the masculine article el, the.

Singular.

Plural.

Nom. *el*,

Nom. *los*, the,

Gen. *del*,

Gen. *de los*, of the,

Dat. *al*,

Dat. *a los*, to the,

Acc. *el*,

Acc. *los*, the,

Abl. *del*,

Abl. *de los*, from the.

Declension of the feminine article la, the.

Singular.

Plural.

Nom. *la*,

Nom. *las*,

Gen. *de la*,

Gen. *de las*,

Dat. *a la*,

Dat. *a las*,

Acc. *la*,

Acc. *las*,

Abl. *de la*,

Abl. *de las*.

The article *the* has no feminine; for the English have no genders for inanimates, or at least they very seldom make use of genders; and when they do, they give the noun the same gender it has in Latin. I don't remember any but the word *ship*, which the English make of the feminine (it being of that gender in Latin *navis*); and they'll say, *she's a good sailer*; *she's a stiff ship*; *she's a crank ship*; *she's a long*, *she's a broad ship*, &c.

Declension of the neuter article *lo*, *the*, &c.

Nom. *lo*,

Gen. *de lo*,

Dat. *à lo*,

Acc. *lo*,

Abl. *de lo*.

I have already said it takes the masculine article in the plural.

You must take notice, that the masculine article is irregular; the singular being *el*, makes *los*, in the plural; but the feminine is regular; for it forms its plural by the addition of the letter *s*; for example, *la* adds *s*, *las*, you have the plural.

Though the article *el* is masculine, yet it is sometimes joined to a substantive of the feminine gender, but in the singular number only; and never in the plural, to avoid the meeting of two *aa*, viz. *el alma*, *el agua*, &c. I have said that this happens only in the singular, for the cause is taken away in the plural, the letter *s* coming between the vowels *aa*, as *las almas*, *las aguas*.

Sometimes this article, for the elegance of the expression, is put before a verb, as *el beber*, *el comer*, *el dormir*, &c.

The articles very often become pronouns, as thus. *El mismo me dió esto*, the same person gave me this; *el mismo habló con el rey*, the same person spoke with the king, &c.

Of the article *lo*.

We must use this article *lo*, when an adjective is taken substantively; as, *Yo te daré lo tuyo*, I will give
give

give you yours, or that which is yours, that which belongs to you, or falls to your share. *Quiero lo mio*, I will have, I desire my own; that which belongs to me. *Dale lo suyo*, give him his own, what appertains to him. By which examples, it is clear that *mio*, *tuyo*, *suyo*, though in their nature adjectives, are here substantives, or take place as substantives; for they stand by themselves and make a complete sense without the help of another word, which is the property of a noun substantive; as will be shewn when we come to speak of those nouns.

Of the definition and division of NOUNS and GENDERS.

A Noun is a part of speech, which does not refer to time, and which, with the assistance of the article, has gender, number, and case; as, *el cielo*, *la tierra*, *la virtud*, *el vicio*, *el grande*, *el pequeño*, *lo bueno*, *lo malo*, &c.

Nouns are divided into substantive and adjective: the substantive declares its full meaning without the addition of another word; as *hombre* a man, *muger* a woman, *sol* the sun, *luna* the moon, &c.

The noun adjective has no meaning of itself, and requires the assistance of a substantive to complete the sense, which would otherwise be unintelligible; and this substantive is either expressed or understood. Examples of adjectives are *grande* great, *pequeño* little, *negro* black, *roxo* red, *blanco* white, &c. Now should I say, give me a black, a red, &c. without referring to some substantive, as a black hood, a red cloak, &c. it is plain I should not

not be understood; but if I had mentioned the substantive before, there is no necessity of expressing it: for example, if I say, shew me a fine cloth; the question may very well be asked, will you have a red or blue, a white or black? &c. where either the substantive colour, or cloth, is understood.

The noun substantive is again divided into proper and appellative. The noun substantive proper, is that which is appropriated to some particular thing, to distinguish it from some other of the same species, or sort, as *Pedro* Peter, *Juan* John, *Madrid*, *Roma* Rome, *Londres* London, &c.

The noun substantive appellative is that which includes many of the same sort; as a province, a kingdom, a king, a soldier, an animal, *provincia*, *reyno*, *rey*, *soldado*, *animal*, &c.

Nouns, whether substantives or adjectives, are divided into primitives and derivatives. The primitive, as well in the adjective, as in the substantive, is that which is not beholden to any other word for its original, and owes it to the institution only of its own language, or of that language, from whence its own is derived; viz. *homo* is Latin, and *hombre* is Spanish; notwithstanding it is as much esteemed a primitive in the latter, as in the former; and so, *verde*, *feco*, *roxo*, *triste*, &c. though they are derived from the Latin, are looked upon as primitive adjectives.

A noun derivative is that which is formed from some other word, which is its primitive; viz. *regularidad*, *humanidad*, &c. are derived from *regla*, and *hombre*, for which reason they are called derivatives.

Again, nouns are divided into simple and compound;

pound; as *prudente*, *imprudente*: the former is simple, the latter compounded of *in*, and *prudente*.

The noun adjective is divided into positive, and comparative; viz. *sabio* wise; *mas sabio*, wiser; where it is visible that the former is positive, and the latter comparative, by the addition of *mas*; for when in English, I say wiser, it implies that I make a comparison with somebody, wiser than his brother, &c. The word *mas* answers to the English word *more*; as, more subtle than a serpent; more innocent than a dove, &c.

There are other classes of nouns, as augmentatives, diminutives, numerals, and ordinals, every one of which we shall speak of in their proper places.

Finally, both substantives and adjectives are divided into the masculine and feminine gender; the masculine is attributed to the male, and the feminine to the female; as, *el sol*, *el hombre*, *la luna*, *la muger*.

Rules for distinguishing the genders.

I. **N**ouns ending in *e* are masculine, as *hombre* a man, *monte* a mountain, *valle* a valley, *page* a page, &c. except *coriente* a stream, *cumbre* the top of an hill, *nave* a ship, *vis lumbre* the dusk, *ube* an udder, which are feminine, and take the article *la*, as *la coriente*, *la cumbre*, *la nave*, *la vis lumbre*, *la ube*.

II. Those nouns which end in *i* and *y* are masculine, as *bucy* an ox, *rey* a king, *maravedi* a piece of money, &c. except *ley* law, *grey* a flock, which are feminine.

III. All

III. All nouns terminating in *o* are masculine, as *templo* a temple, *ejemplo* an example, *pueblo* a people, *braso* the arm, &c. except *la mano* the hand, *la nao* the ship, which are feminine.

IV. The termination *u* is masculine, as *espíritu* the spirit, &c.

V. All nouns ending in *a* are feminine, as *virtud*, *verdad*, virtue, truth, &c. except *adalid* a guide, *ataud* a coffin, a bier, *laud* a lute, which are masculine; *el adalid*, *el ataud*, *el laud*.

VI. Nouns ending in *a* are feminine, as *campana* a bell, *semana* a week, *mañana* the morning, &c. But the following, most of which mark the male sex, are masculine, notwithstanding they have a feminine termination; viz. *profeta* a prophet, *evangelista* an evangelist, *poeta* a poet, *planeta* a planet, *ateista* an atheist, *anabatista* an anabaptist, *Calvinista* a Calvinist, *Jesuita* a Jesuit, *alquimista* an alchymist, *dia* a day, *mana* manna, *clima* a climate, *alcavala* a tribute or custom, *papa* the pope. They consequently have the masculine article *el*, as *el papa*, *el planeta*, *el clima*, *el dia*, *el mana*, &c.

VII. All nouns which end in *l*, are masculine, as *batel* a skiff, *pincel* a pencil, *papel* paper, &c. but you must except these feminines, viz. *la cal* lime, *la miel* honey, *la biel* the gall, *la piel* the skin, *la sal* salt, *la carzel* a prison.

VIII. Those nouns which terminate in *n* are masculines, as *el pan* bread, *almazen* an arsenal, a warehouse, *el corazón* the heart, &c. except *la sien* the temple of the head, *la sartén* a frying-pan, *la crin* beast's hair, *la orden* order, rank, disposition, a command; which are all feminine.

18 *The Spanish Grammar.*

IX. Nouns that end in *ion*, are feminine, as *condicion* condition, *justificacion* justification, *admiracion* admiration, *privacion* privation, *prision* the time a person has been in confinement, *condenacion* condemnation, &c.

X. Words terminating in *r* are masculine, as *amor* love, *dolor* grief, pain, *ardor* ardor, &c. but *la flor* a flower, *la labor* labour, *la mar* the sea, are feminine. You must remark, that when this word *mar* is before an adjective, it becomes masculine; for example, you must say, *el mar Mediterraneo*, and not *la mar Mediterraneo*.

XI. Those nouns which end in *s* are masculines, as *anis* anis, *mies* grain, *mais* millet, &c. All nouns ending in *x* are masculine, as *relox* a clock, *trox* an hole made in the earth for the keeping grain, *carcax* a quiver, &c.

Of the declension of nouns.

HAVING given rules by which the genders of nouns may be known, I shall proceed to their cases, which are six, and are as follow; the nominative, the genitive, the dative, the accusative, the vocative, and the ablative.

The nominative is so called, from the Latin *nominare*, because it always mentions the thing or person whom we speak of; as, *el rey* the king, *el governador* the governor, *el capitan* the captain.

The genitive takes its name from the Latin verb *gignere* to beget; for all the other cases in Latin are form'd from this; as *amator*, *amatoris*, *amatori*, &c. and is also so called, because it shews the thing or person

person from which some other proceeds; as, *el hijo del principe*, the son of the prince, &c.

The dative, so called from the supine *datum* of the verb *dare* to give, denotes a transition from one place or person to another; as, *doy mi camisa à Pedro*, I give my shirt to Peter.

The accusative in Spanish is always the same with the nominative, and is so named from the verb *accusare* to accuse, because it declares the subject of the verb; as, *amo à Dios*, I love God, where God is the subject of my love: it always follows the verb; as, *accusar el ladron*, to accuse the thief; *accusar el malo*, to impeach the wicked, &c.

The vocative has its name from the supine *vocatum*, of the verb *vocare*. This case is used in speaking or calling to another; as, *O! amigo, ven à mi socorro*, O! friend, come to my assistance (succour); *O! Dios, socorre me en mis necesidades*, O God, assist me in my necessity, &c.

The ablative derives its name from the supine *ablatum*, of the verb *auferre*, to carry or take away; it signifies an ablation, follows verbs of separation, and in Spanish is always like the genitive: it has these signs, *from, by, with, out, of*; as, *sacar un hombre de la carzel*, to get a man out of prison, &c.

You may observe farther, that the Spanish never varies the termination of the word in the declensions, as the Latin does; but that the cases are distinguished by the article.

Take notice also, that when you would have the plural of a word, which terminates in a vowel, you form it by the addition of an *s*; as, *alma, almas*; *hombre, hombres*, &c. The plural of those words which end in a consonant, is form'd by adding *es*

to the singular; as, *mugèr, mugeres; tribunal, tribunales*; excepting the word *relox*, which changes the *x* in the singular into a *g* in the plural, and makes *relojes*.

These rules being established, I shall proceed to the declension of nouns, both substantive and adjective.

Declension of proper nouns of the masculine gender.

Pedro, Peter, &c.

Nom. *Pedro*, Peter.

Gen. *de Pedro*, of Peter.

Dat. *à Pedro*, to Peter.

Acc. *Pedro*, Peter.

Voc. *o Pedro*, o Peter.

Abl. *de Pedro*, from Peter.

Declension of nouns proper of the feminine gender.

Maria, Mary.

Nom. *Maria*, Mary.

Gen. *de Maria*, of Mary.

Dat. *à Maria*, to Mary.

Acc. *Maria*, Mary.

Voc. *o Maria*, o Mary.

Abl. *de Maria*, from Mary.

Declension of the nouns common in the masculine gender.

El padre, the father.

Singular.

N. *el padre*, the father.

Plural.

N. *los padres*, the fathers.

G. *del*

The Spanish Grammar. 21

G. <i>del padre</i> , of the father.	G. <i>de los padres</i> , of the father.
D. <i>al padre</i> , to the father.	D. <i>à los padres</i> , to the fathers.
A. <i>el padre</i> , the father.	A. <i>los padres</i> , the fathers.
V. <i>o padre</i> , o father.	V. <i>o padres</i> , o fathers.
Abl. <i>del padre</i> , from the father.	Abl. <i>de los padres</i> , from the fathers.

Declension of the same nouns in the feminine gender.

La madre, the mother.

Singular.	Plural.
N. <i>la madre</i> , the mother.	N. <i>las madres</i> , the mothers.
G. <i>de la madre</i> ,	G. <i>de las madres</i> ,
D. <i>à la madre</i> ,	D. <i>à las madres</i> ,
A. <i>la madre</i> ,	A. <i>las madres</i> ,
V. <i>o madre</i> ,	V. <i>o madres</i> ,
Abl. <i>de la madre</i> .	Abl. <i>de las madres</i> .

The declension of nouns adjective.

It is requisite that I should, before I proceed to the examples, desire you would take notice, that all adjectives in the Spanish tongue, end in one of these five letters; viz. in *a, e, o, l, or z*; as, *buena, triste, poderoso, debil, capaz*. That you may find less difficulty in the declension, I shall decline an adjective of each of these terminations.

Declension of the termination a.

La buena, the good, &c.

Singular.

N. la buena, good.

G. de la buena,

D. à la buena,

A. la buena,

V. o buena,

Abl. de la buena.

Plural.

N. las buenas, good.

G. de las buenas,

D. à las buenas,

A. las buenas,

V. o buenas,

Abl. de las buenas.

It has no plural in English, as indeed none of the adjectives have, without they are taken substantively.

Declension of the termination e.

El triste, sad, &c.

Singular.

N. el triste,

G. del triste,

D. al triste,

A. el triste,

V. o triste,

Abl. del triste.

Plural.

N. los tristes,

G. de los tristes,

D. à los tristes,

A. los tristes,

V. o tristes,

Abl. de los tristes.

Declension of the termination o.

El poderoso, powerful, &c.

Singular.

N. el poderoso,

G. del poderoso,

D. al poderoso,

A. el poderoso,

V. o poderoso,

Abl. del poderoso.

Plural.

N. los poderosos,

G. de los poderosos,

D. à los poderosos,

A. los poderosos,

V. o los poderosos,

Abl. de los poderosos.

The

The termination l declined.

Singular.	Plural.
N. <i>el debil</i> , weak.	N. <i>los debiles</i> ;
G. <i>del debil</i> ,	G. <i>de los debiles</i> ,
D. <i>al debil</i> ,	D. <i>à los debiles</i> ,
A. <i>el debil</i> ,	A. <i>los debiles</i> ,
V. <i>ò debil</i> ,	V. <i>ò los debiles</i> ,
Abl. <i>del debil</i> .	Abl. <i>de los debiles</i> .

The termination z declined.

El capaz, large, &c.

Singular.	Plural.
N. <i>el capaz</i> , large.	N. <i>los capaces</i> ,
G. <i>del capaz</i> ,	G. <i>de los capaces</i> ,
D. <i>al capaz</i> ,	D. <i>à los capaces</i> ,
A. <i>el capaz</i> ,	A. <i>los capaces</i> ,
V. <i>ò capaz</i> ,	V. <i>ò los capaces</i> ,
Abl. <i>del capaz</i> .	Abl. <i>de los capaces</i> .

All nouns adjective are declined after the same manner, excepting *grande*, *santo* and *bueno* ; for the adjective *grande*, when followed by a substantive which begins with a consonant, loses the last syllable *de* ; for example, you cannot say *grande muger*, *grande cavallo*, but you must retrench the last syllable, and say, *gran muger*, *gran cavallo*, &c. But if *grande* precedes a substantive which has a vowel for its initial letter, it then remains entire, and is thus declined.

Nom. *el grande animo*, a great mind.

Gen. *del grande animo*, of the great mind.

Dat. *al grande*, &c. to the great mind.

The adjective *santo* loses also the last syllable, be it before either a vowel or a consonant; for you cannot say *santo Pedro*, *santo Antonio*, &c. but *san Pedro*, *san Antonio*, &c. except in the following, *santo Thomas*, *santo Domingo*, where you see nothing retrench'd; but *sant Iago* must be pronounced as here wrote, losing only the *o* in *santo*.

When a substantive, to which the adjective *bueno* is joined, follows immediately, the adjective loses its last letter; as, *buen hombre*, a good man; *buen cavallo*, a good horse; and not *bueno hombre*, &c. It is the same in regard of *malo*; as, *mal hombre*, an ill man; *mal cavallo*, a bad horse, &c. But, when the adjective *bueno* follows its substantive, it loses nothing; for we say *hombre bueno*, or *malo*; *cavallo bueno*, or *malo*, &c. But here take notice, this is only in the masculine gender, for in the feminine they suffer no retrenchment either before or after the substantive; for you may say *buena*, *mala muger*; or, *muger buena*, *mala*. *Tanto* and *quanto* in the same manner lose the syllable before their adjectives; as, *tan grande*, *quan grande*; *tan pequeño*, *quan pequeño*; *tan bueno*, *quan bueno*; *tan malo*, *quan malo*; *tan temprano*, *quan temprano*; *tan tarde*, *quan tarde*, &c.

Of the comparatives and superlatives.

There are three degrees of comparison reckoned by the grammarians, though I cannot see that there are more than two properly so called, which are the comparative and superlative; for the positive cannot be said to compare; for when I say *wise*, it is visible I only positively mention a quality, without making any comparison; but when I say *wiser*, I

2

then

then make a comparison; as, *John is wiser than Peter*. Nay, even the superlative may be denied as a degree of comparison; for when I say *your letters were obliging*, or *your letters were very obliging*, I think it is evident, that I make no more comparison in the latter than in the former, and it is only a degree in the signification. When I say *John is wise*, *John is wiser*, *John is the wisest*, I make no comparison in the first and last diction; the first marks simply and positively the epithet, *John is wise*; the last marks an excess of the quality, *John is the wisest*; but cannot justly be said to make any comparison: and it is as erroneous to say, that the superlative is the last excess; for we may form a comparative even upon a superlative, and consequently, the comparative will then exceed it. Terence gives us an example of this, *Persuade tibi te mihi esse charissimum, sed multo fore chariorem, si, &c.* Cicero says, *Ego autem hoc sum miserior quàm tu, quàm es miserrima, &c.* But as my business is to teach, and not to criticise, I shall follow the common road, and allow three degrees, which are the positive, comparative, and superlative; as, *good, better, best*. The comparative is made use of to compare one thing with another, and either magnifies or lessens; in Spanish it is formed by *mas*, more; or *menos*, less, being joined to the adjective: *Pedro es mas docto que Juan*, Peter is more learned than John; *Juan es menos docto que rico*, John is less learned than rich.

But the following are to be excepted, viz. *bueno*, *malo*, &c. for they do not make the comparative by taking to them *mas*; *bueno* good makes *mejor* better; *malo* bad, *peor* worse; *pequeño* little, *menor* less;

less; *grande* great makes *mayor* bigger, greater: as, *Pedro es mejor que Juan*, Peter is better than John; *la peste es peor que la zarna*, the plague is worse than the itch; *el sol es mayor que la luna*, the sun is bigger than the moon, &c.

The superlative is formed of its adjective, by changing the last letter into an *i*, and adding *ssimo* for the masculine, and *ssima* for the feminine; as, *grande*, *grandissimo*, *grandissima*; *santo*, *santissimo*, *santissima*, &c. The comparative, when it has an article before it, becomes a superlative; as, *el mas docto de todos*, the most learned of all; where it is evident, that notwithstanding *mas docto* is of itself a comparative, yet being preceded by an article, it becomes a superlative; the other articles *la* and *lo* have the same force. As *mas* I have said is a particle which forms the comparative, so *muy* makes the superlative; as we say *bueno*, *mejor* or *mas bueno*, *muy bueno* in the superlative.

Of nouns augmentative and diminutive.

It is one of the greatest elegancies in the Spanish language, that by the addition of a letter or syllable to a word, it either augments or diminishes the signification.

All the augmentatives are terminated in *on* and *na*; as, *hombron* a great man; *mugeron* a masculine woman; *bafon* a large bafon, &c. Which shews, that our ideas are, by the addition of a syllable, much augmented; for *hombre* gives me the idea of a common man, *muger* of an ordinary woman; whereas *hombron* strikes me with the idea of something gigantic, and exceeding the common size, as *mugeron* does in regard to a woman.

The

The diminutives, though they lessen the subject, augment the idea we had; they are terminated in *ico, ito, illo, uelo, and ino*; as, *bombrezillo, bombrezito*, a little man. Where I have a stronger or a more enlarged idea of something very little: *mosico*, a little boy; *pequeñuelo*, very little; *cigotino*, a little or young stork. These always retain the gender of their primitives from which they are formed: viz. *bombrezillo* is a masculine, being formed from *bombre*, which is of that gender; the same is to be understood of diminutives formed from nouns of the feminine gender.

There are other diminutives, which even augment the signification of the thing mentioned; as, *grandezillo*, somewhat big; *grossezuelo*, somewhat bulky.

Other diminutives are again diminished; viz. *cbiquito* is a diminutive, from which is formed *cbiquitico*, which is still less.

Of the nouns numeral.

These nouns are differently terminated, as we shall shew. It is necessary here to observe, that when *uno* one, comes before a noun, it loses the *o*; as, *un hombre, un cavàllo*: this is the only one of the numerals till you come to an hundred, which has both numbers and genders; for you may say, *unos hombres*, some men; *unas mugères*, some women. When it is in the feminine, it does not lose the last letter, as it does in the masculine gender; for though you must say, *un cavàllo*, you cannot say *un casa*, but *una casa*, an house; *una mugèr*, a woman, &c.

Uno,

Uno, ùna, one.

dos, two.

très, three.

quàtro, four.

cinco, five.

seis, six.

siète, seven.

òcho, eight.

nuève, nine.

diez, ten.

onze, eleven.

dòze, twelve.

trèze, thirteen.

catòrze, fourteen.

quinze, fifteen.

diez y seis, sixteen.

diez y siète, seventeen.

diez y òcho, eighteen.

diez y nueve, nineteen.

veinte, twenty.

veinte y uno, one-and-twenty.

veinte y dos, two-and-twenty, &c.

treyn ta, thirty.

quarènta, forty.

cinquènta, fifty.

sesenta, sixty.

setènta, seventy.

ochènta, eighty.

novènta, ninety.

ciènto, an hundred.

ciènto y uno, an hundred and one.

ciènto y dos, an hundred and two.

ciènto y diez, an hundred and ten.

ciènto y veinte, an hundred and twenty.

From

From an hundred to a thousand all the numerals are adjectives, and agree with the gender of their substantives ; as, *docientos* and *docientas*, two hundred ; *treientos* and *treientas*, three hundred, &c.

mil, a thousand.

dos mil, two thousand.

cien mil, an hundred thousand.

quinientos mil, five hundred thousand.

un millon, a million.

dos millones, two millions, &c.

When *ciento* is followed by another noun, it loses the last letter ; as, *cien hombres*, an hundred men, and not *ciento hombres* ; *cien mugeres*, and not *ciento mugeres*, an hundred women, &c. But if the conjunction copulative (*y*) comes between *ciento* and another word, it loses nothing ; as, *ciento y diez*, *ciento y veinte*, &c. For you must not say *cien y diez*, &c.

Of the ordinals.

The following nouns are called ordinals.

Primero, the first.

segundo, the second.

tercero, the third.

quarto, the fourth.

quinto, the fifth.

sexto, the sixth.

septimo, the seventh.

oçtavo, the eighth.

nono, the ninth.

decimo, the tenth.

undecimo, the eleventh.

duodecimo, the twelfth.

decimo tercio, the thirteenth.

decimo

decimo quarto, the fourteenth.

decimo quinto, the fifteenth.

decimo sexto, the sixteenth.

decimo septimo, the seventeenth.

decimo octavo, the eighteenth.

decimo nono, the nineteenth.

vigesimo, the twentieth.

vigesimo primero, the one-and-twentieth, &c.

trigesimo, the thirtieth.

trigesimo primero, the thirty-first.

quadragesimo, the fortieth.

quadragesimo primero, the forty-first.

quinquagesimo, the fiftieth.

sexagesimo, the sixtieth.

septuagesimo, the seventieth.

octuagesimo, the eightieth.

nonagesimo, the ninetieth.

centesimo, the hundredth.

millesimo, the thousandth.

We have nothing to observe upon these ordinals, but that they are pronounced as they are wrote, and that they form the feminine by changing *o* into *a*; as, *primera*, *segunda*, *tercera*, &c.

Of the PRONOUNS.

A Pronoun is reckoned a distinct part of speech, though Sanctius says they are real nouns, and differ in nothing but their manner of declension; they are used in the place of a noun to avoid repetition.

They

They are divided into seven classes; viz. personal, conjunctive, possessive, demonstrative, interrogative, relative, and improper.

Of the pronoun personal.

This marks the first, second, and third person in both numbers; as, *yo*, I; *tu*, thou; *el*, he; for the singular: *nosotros*, we; *vosotros*, ye; *ellos*, they; for the plural: as, *yo amo*, I love; *tu amas*, thou lovest; *el ama*, he loves: in the plural; *nosotros amamos*, we love; *vosotros amais*, ye love; *ellos aman*, they love.

Of the pronoun conjunctive.

This has a very near resemblance to the personal; I shall therefore give an explanation, which may suffice to shew the difference between them. They are called conjunctives, because of their being always placed before the verbs, as are the personals, but with this difference: the conjunctives are never the nominative case to the verbs they precede, but ever the dative or accusative of the said verbs. These conjunctives are seven in number; *me*, *te*, *se*, *el*, *nosotros*, *vosotros*, *ellos*, or *aquellos*; viz. *mi padre me habla*, my father speaks to me; *mi amigo te escribió*, my friend wrote to you; *los soldados se vantan*, the soldiers boast; *el filosofo nos enseña*, the philosopher teaches us; *el rey os*, or *vos manda*, the king commands you; *escrivi à ellos*, or *aquellos hombres*, I wrote to those men. In short, when *nos* and *vos* agree with the verb in number and person, they are personals; but when they do not thus

agree with the verb, they are conjunctives. An example of each will make this clear. *Nos o nosotros dezimos*, we say: here *nos* is a pronoun personal, for it is visibly the nominative to the verb, and agrees with it in number and person. *Pedro os dirà*, Peter will tell you: here *os* is the case, which the verb requires after it, and not the nominative; it does not agree with the verb in number and person; for *dirà* is the third person singular, and *os* the second person plural; wherefore you may conclude it is in this sentence a conjunctive.

Of the pronoun possessive.

The pronoun possessive is that which marks property or possession; there are six of them, three singular, three plural; viz. *mi*, *tu*, *su*; *nuèstro*, *vuestro*, *sus*. Ex. *mi padre*, my father; *tu hermano*, thy brother; *su criado*, his servant; *nuèstro amigo*, our friend; *vuestro enemigo*, your enemy; *sus padres*, their fathers.

Pronoun demonstrative.

This pronoun marks, indicates, or points out, either a thing or person, and is masculine, feminine, and neuter; as, *este*, *esse*, *èsta*, *èssa*, *èsto*, *èssò*, or *aquello*; viz. *este hombre*, this man; *esse cavàllo*, that horse; *èsta mugèr*, this woman; *èssa camisa*, that shirt; *èsto que me dizes me gusta*, what you tell me pleases me. All which shall be more fully explained to, when we decline these pronouns; and their application and use shall be shewn in the syntax.

The

The pronoun interrogative.

This, as its name sufficiently declares, serves in the asking a question; as, *Que dizes?* What do you say? *Quien va hai?* Who goes there? *Qual de los dos?* Which of the two? *Cuyo es este cavallo?* Whose horse is this? But we shall take farther notice of this pronoun.

Of the pronoun relative.

The pronoun relative points out the subject, without repeating it, as in this example; *God whom we adore is the creator of, &c.* where the relative *whom* refers to God the subject of our adoration; and is the same as if I had said *God, which God I adore, is, &c.* *The gloves which I bought* (that is, which gloves I bought) *are spoiled.* *The general whose bravery, &c.* *Pedro ama à Maria y ella à el,* Peter loves Mary, and she loves him (that is, loves Peter, to which the relative *him* refers). *El duque de Marlbrò a sido un gran general, que fuè sin par,* the duke of Marlborough was so great a general, that he had no equal: where *que* is the same as duke, &c. I have before said, that *que* is an interrogative, and in this place it is a relative; because, according to the manner it is made use of, it is both the one and the other, as may be remarked by the examples already brought; for taking notice of the sense of the clause, it is easy to discern when it is interrogative, and when relative.

Of the pronoun improper.

As the declining this pronoun will be sufficient to give you an entire knowledge of it, I shall omit saying any thing here. If there should be any difficulty found, I leave it to the discretion of a master: these following, which are indefinite, are what we call improper pronouns; viz. *tàl*, such; *algùno*, somebody, one or other; *càda*, each or every; *quièn*, who; *ningùno*, none; *nàdie*, no body; *ci-èrto*, certain; *òtro*, another; *mùcho*, much; *tàdo*, all; *mismo*, the same: all which are declined, as you will see in the following examples, which I shall now give, having done with the definition and division of the pronouns; and as the personals are the first, I shall begin with the

*Declension of the pronoun personal of the first person.**Singular.*

Nom. *yo*, I.
 Gen. *de mi*, of me.
 Dat. *à mi*, to me.
 Acc. *me*, me.
 Abl. *de mi*, from me.

Plural.

Nom. *nosotros*, we.
 Gen. *de nosotros*, of us.
 Dat. *à nosotros*, to us.
 Acc. *nosotros*, us.
 Abl. *de nosotros*, from us.

Declension of the pronoun of the second person.

Singular.

Nom. *tu*, thou or you.

Gen. *de ti*, of thee.

Dat. *à ti*, to thee.

Acc. *te*, thee.

Voc. *ò tu*, o thou.

Abl. *de ti*, from thee.

Plural.

Nom. *vòs ò vosotros*, ye or you.

Gen. *de vòs ò de vosotros*, of you.

Dat. *à vòs ò à vosotros*, to you.

Acc. *vòs ò vosotros*, you.

Voc. *ò vòs, ò vosotros*, o you or ye.

Abl. *de vòs, de vosotros*, from you, &c.

Declension of the third person masculine and feminine.

Singular.

Nom. *èl, èlla*, he, she.

Gen. *dèl, dèlla*, of him, of her.

Dat. *à èl, à èlla*, to him, to her.

Acc. *èl, èlla*, him, her.

Abl. *de èl, de èlla*, from him, from her.

Plural.

Nom. *èllos, èllas*, they.

Gen. *de èllos, de èllas*, of them, &c.

Dat. *à èllos, à èllas*.

Acc. *èllos, èllas*.

Abl. *de èllos, de èllas*.

In English there is no distinction in the plural; *they* serving for both sexes.

This pronoun has no nominative, and is also of the third person.

Gen. *de si*, of himself.

Dat. *à si*, to himself.

Acc. *se à si*, himself.

Abl. *de si*, from himself.

This is commonly joined to the adjective *mismo*, as will be shewn in the syntax, where we shall expressly treat of the pronouns; in this place I shall content myself with mentioning their definition, division, and declension, only.

N. B. It is already said, that the pronouns personal and conjunctive differ in this only, that the one agrees with the verb in number and person, and the other is the case of the verb; wherefore having declined one, it is not necessary to decline the other, since they are alike in all, except in the above difference.

Declension of the pronoun possessive singular.

Masculine, feminine, and neuter.

Nom. *el mio, la mia, lo mio*, mine.

Gen. *del tuyo, de la tuya, de lo tuyo*, of thine.

Dat. *al suyo, à la suya, à lo suyo*, to his.

Acc. *el nuestro, la nuestra, lo nuestro*, our.

Abl. *del vuestro, de la vuestra, de lo vuestro*, from your.

Plural.

Plural.

Nom. *los mios, las mias.*

Gen. *de los tuyos, de las tuyas, &c.*

All these are singly declined throughout all their cases like other nouns foregoing.

Declension of the pronouns demonstrative in the

Singular.

Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
Nom. <i>este,</i>	<i>esta,</i>	<i>esto, this.</i>
Gen. <i>de este,</i>	<i>de esta,</i>	<i>de esto, of this.</i>
Dat. <i>à este,</i>	<i>à esta,</i>	<i>à esto, to this.</i>
Acc. <i>este,</i>	<i>esta,</i>	<i>esto, this.</i>
Abl. <i>de este,</i>	<i>de esta,</i>	<i>de esto, from this.</i>

Plural.

Masc.	Fem.
Nom. <i>estos,</i>	<i>estas, these.</i>
Gen. <i>de estos,</i>	<i>de estas, of these.</i>
Dat. <i>à estos,</i>	<i>à estas, to these.</i>
Acc. <i>estos,</i>	<i>estas, these.</i>
Abl. <i>de estos,</i>	<i>de estas, from these.</i>

Singular.

Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
Nom. <i>esse,</i>	<i>essa,</i>	<i>esso, that.</i>
Gen. <i>de esse,</i>	<i>de essa,</i>	<i>de esso, of that.</i>
Dat. <i>à esse,</i>	<i>à essa,</i>	<i>à esso, to that.</i>
Acc. <i>esse,</i>	<i>essa,</i>	<i>esso, that.</i>
Abl. <i>de esse,</i>	<i>de essa,</i>	<i>de esso, from that.</i>

Plural.

Masc.	Fem.
Nom. <i>èssos</i> ,	<i>èssas</i> , those.
Gen. <i>de èssos</i> ,	<i>de èssas</i> , of those.
Dat. <i>à èssos</i> ,	<i>à èssas</i> , to those.
Acc. <i>èssos</i> ,	<i>èssas</i> , those.
Abl. <i>de èssos</i> ,	<i>de èssas</i> , from those.

Singular.

Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
Nom. <i>aquèl</i> ,	<i>aquèlla</i> ,	<i>aquello</i> , that.
Gen. <i>de aquèl</i> ,	<i>de aquèlla</i> ,	<i>de aquello</i> , of that.
Dat. <i>à aquèl</i> ,	<i>à aquèlla</i> ,	<i>à aquello</i> , to that.
Acc. <i>aquèl</i> ,	<i>aquèlla</i> ,	<i>aquello</i> , that.
Abl. <i>de aquèl</i> ,	<i>de aquèlla</i> ,	<i>de aquello</i> , from that.

Plural.

Masc.	Fem.
Nom. <i>aquèllos</i> ,	<i>aquèllas</i> , those.
Gen. <i>de aquèllos</i> ,	<i>de aquèllas</i> , of those.
Dat. <i>à aquèllos</i> ,	<i>à aquèllas</i> , to those.
Acc. <i>aquèllos</i> ,	<i>aquèllas</i> , those.
Abl. <i>de aquèllos</i> ,	<i>de aquèllas</i> , from those.

Declension of the interrogative.

Singular.

Nom. <i>quièn</i> , <i>què</i> , <i>quàl</i> , who, what, which.
Gen. <i>de quièn</i> , <i>de què</i> , <i>de quàl</i> , of whose.
Dat. <i>à quièn</i> , <i>à què</i> , <i>à quàl</i> , to whom.
Acc. <i>quèn</i> , <i>què</i> , <i>quàl</i> , who, what, which.
Abl. <i>de quièn</i> , <i>de què</i> , <i>de quàl</i> , from whom.

Plural.

Plural.

Nom. *quiènes, quàles*, who, what, which.

Gen. *de quiènes, de quàles*, of whose.

Dat. *à quiènès, à quàles*, to whom.

Acc. *quiènes, quàles* whom, what, which.

Abl. *de quiènes, de quàles*, from whom.

Quien, who ; genitive, of whom, &c. as, *Quien es ?* Who's there? *Quien es el ?* Who is he? *Quien es usted ?* Who are you? *Quiènes son estos ?* Who are they? *Quiènes son aquellos ?* Who are those People? *Quienquiera, que sea*, whosoever it be.

Qué, what, has no plural either in Spanish or English.

Que dize ? What does he say? *Que ay ?* What's the matter? *Que se dize ?* What news? *Que hora es ?* What's a clock? *Que sabe usted ?* How do you know? *Que quiere dezir esso ?* What does that mean?

Qual, which, who ; *qualquiera*, whosoever or whatsoever. In English it has no plural.

These are also relatives, and are declined singly, as above ; viz. *què, de què*, what, of what.

Quièn, de quièn, who, of whom.

El quàl, del qual, which, of which.

Plural.

Los quales, de los quàles, à los quàles, &c.

Declension of the pronouns improper.

Singular.

Nom. *el tàl*,

Gen. *del tàl*,

Plural.

los tàles, fuch.

de los tàles, of fuch.

Dat. <i>al tal,</i>	<i>à los tåles,</i> to such.
Acc. <i>el tål,</i>	<i>los tåles,</i> such.
Abl. <i>del tål,</i>	<i>de los tåles,</i> from such.

Tal, such ; *no digo tål,* I say no such thing ; *no ay tål,* there is no such thing.

Rules for the Conjugation of VERBS both regular and irregular.

THE verb is a part of speech, which varies its termination, but not after the same manner as the noun does ; for that is declined with six cases, and marks no time, neither has it any moods ; whereas the verb is conjugated with moods and tenses, and has no cases. The nature of the verb is to affirm ; the moods determine the signification of verbs, as to the manner and circumstances of the affirmation ; as, *I love, I may love, &c.* Tenses are the distinction of time ; as, *I love, I did love.* To conjugate a verb, is to form or vary it according to its several moods, tenses, and persons. There are four moods ; the first of which is the indicative, from *indicare*, which simply denotes the action ; as, *yo enseño,* I teach ; *yo amo,* I love.

The second is the imperative, from *imperare*, to command ; as, *enseña à esse muchàcho,* teach that child, read the lesson, &c. The optative is the third mood, from *optare*, to desire, to wish, to pray ; as, *òxala llurvièsse,* I wish it would rain ; *òxala llamàra usted à su criado,* I wish you would call your servant.

The

The fourth is the infinitive, and is so called, because it is not limited either by number or person, as other moods are; as, *enseñar*, to teach; *leer*, to read; *oir*, to hear; *comer*, to eat; *dormir*, to sleep, &c.

The Latin has another mood, called the subjunctive, because it has some condition joined to what is affirmed: but this mood differs from the optative in its signs only; wherefore the Spaniards only distinguish it by *como*, and reckon up no more than the four mentioned.

Verbs have also gerunds, supines, and participles, in the Spanish, as well as in the Latin and English.

The gerund is so called, from its bearing a double signification, viz. that of a noun, and that of a verb. There are three of these gerunds; as (in Latin) *amandi*, of loving; *amando*, in loving; and *amandum*, to love. For that in *di*, the Spaniards use the infinitive mood, and the preposition *de*; as, *de amar*, of loving; the gerund in *do* follows the Latin, *amando*, *leyendo*, &c. in loving, in reading, &c. For the gerund in *dum*, they use the infinitive mood, and the preposition; as, *a amar*, to love.

A supine is a termination of a verb, and has the same signification as the present tense of the infinitive mood, either active or passive; *amatum* in Latin, to love; *amatu*, to be loved: in Spanish, *amar*, to love; *de ser amado*, to be loved.

A participle derives its name from *pars* and *capio*, as it partakes both of a noun and a verb.

There are four in Latin.

The

The participle of the present tense; as, *amans*, *el que ama*, in the Spanish.

The participle of the preterperfect tense; as, *amatus*, loved; *amado* in Spanish.

Participle of the future in *rus*; *amaturus*, to love, or about to love. In Spanish, *el que à d'espera de amar*.

Participle of the future in *das*; *amandus*, to be loved. In Spanish, *lo que ha de ser amado*.

This definition of the verb and the moods being sufficient, I shall proceed to speak of the tenses.

There are properly but three tenses or times, *viz.* the present, the past, and the future.

The present tense, shews the present action of the verb; as, *yo lèo*, *tu lèes*, *el lèe*, I read, thou readest, he reads; *yo enseño*, *tu enseñas*, *el enseña*, &c. I teach, thou teachest, he teaches.

The past, is either perfectly past; as, *amavi*, *amè*, I loved: or imperfectly past; as, *amabam*, *amàva*, I did love: where the action of loving is past, in regard to the time in which I speak; and present, in regard of some circumstance; as, *I did love when I was young*. Or lastly, and when it is called the preterpluperfect, it is past before some circumstance happened, which is also past; as, *I had supp'd when you came in*.

Now these times are distinguished by proper tenses; as,

The preterimperfect,

The preterperfect,

The preterpluperfect.

The preterperfect is again divided into the definite and indefinite; the former determines the time of

of the action of the verb entirely past; as, I saw your uncle yesterday, *vi à su tioayer*.

The latter mentions the time yet passing; as, I have seen your uncle this morning, *he visto à su tio esta mañana*. In English we have not this division; for I can say, *I saw your uncle this morning*, or *have seen your uncle this morning*.

The future tense points out a time to come; as, *amabo, amarè*, I will love. They have in English two signs of this tense, which for want of observation, foreigners confound. The one is conditional; as, *I shall*; the other positive; as, *I will*. The Irish especially do not distinguish between these two signs; and it is common to hear them say, *I shall*, for *I will*, & à contra; as, *I will fall*, for *I shall fall*, &c.

The Spaniards have two futures in the optative or subjunctive, the one simple, the other compound: the former; as, *como revelare*, when I shall reveal; the other, *comouvière revelado*, when I shall have revealed. There are then six tenses, viz. the present, the preterimperfect, the preterperfect definite, the preterperfect indefinite, the preterpluperfect, and the future, simple, and compound.

A tense has three persons in the singular, and three in the plural; the first in the singular is *yo*, I; the second *tu*, thou; the third *el*, or *aquèl*, he. The first plural is *nos*, or *nosotros*, we; the second *vos*, or *vosotros*, ye; the third *ellos*, or *aquèllos*, they; viz. *yo amo*, I love; *tu àmas*, thou lovest; *el* or *aquèl àma*, he loves. Plural, *nos*, or *nosotros amamos*, we love; *vos*, or *vosotros amais*, ye love; *ellos*, or *aquèllos àman*, they love.

I shall now go on to the division of the verbs ; which is, into active, passive, neuter, reciprocal, and impersonal.

A verb active affirms some action, and has always the subject put after it. If in English you are in any difficulty to know, whether a verb be active or not, you may thus discover it ; put the word *something* after it ; and if it makes sense, you may be sure it is active : viz. *to love*, I can say, *I love something* ; but if I say, *to run*, *to swim*, *to dance*, *to jump*, I am certain they are not active ; for I cannot, to be understood, put the word *something* after them ; for it would not be sense to say, *I jump something* ; these then are neuter.

The verb passive speaks sufferance ; as, *I am loved* ; and it is formed of the verb substantive, *I am*, and the participle of the preterperfect tense ; as, *soy amado*, I am loved ; *tu eres amado*, thou art loved ; *el es amado*, he is loved, &c.

The verb neuter differs from the active, after the same manner as the substantive does from the adjective ; that is, the verb neuter makes a complete sense of itself, which the active does not ; as, *caygo*, I fall ; *muero*, I die ; *duermo*, I sleep, &c. For we cannot say, *caygo mi cuerpo*, I fall my body. By this, and the foregoing, the difference is visible between these two verbs.

The verb reciprocal has the same person for its nominative and subject ; as, *me espanto*, I wonder. This verb is hardly known in the English language ; *te àmas*, thou lovest thyself. It is common in other languages, as in French, &c. *promenons nous*, *passèmonos*, let us walk *ourselves*, word for word.

Verbs impersonal have only the third person. They are called so from their wanting the first and second; as, *llueve*, it rains; *yela*, it freezes, &c. They are conjugated throughout in the third person, and in the singular number only.

Verbs are again divided into

Regular and irregular. The regular are such as are confined to general rules: the irregular have none, and differ from the former, in the first preterperfect of the indicative mood, and preterperfect of the optative, as will be seen in the conjugations.

Conjugation of verbs.

As the auxiliary verb *haver* is necessary for the conjugating the preterperfects of the verbs, both active, passive, neuter, and reciprocal; and since without the verb substantive *foy*, the passive cannot be conjugated; I shall begin with these two verbs, as absolutely necessary to be first learned.

The termination of all verbs, whether regular or irregular, are in *ar*, *er*, and *ir*: in *ar*; as, *hablar*, to speak; *enseñar*, to teach; *almorzar*, to breakfast: in *er*; as, *nacer*, to be born; *entender*, to understand; *comer*, to eat; *bever*, to drink: in *ir*; as, *oir*, to hear; *dormir*, to sleep; *escribir*, to write.

N. B. The Spaniards never made use of the second person, either in the singular or plural; except when a father speaks to his children, an husband to his wife, or a master to his servant; but in speaking to others, they use the word *usted* in the singular, and *ustedes* in the plural, which answers

to

to the second person of the English, *you*, or *vuestra merced*, in length, &c. for politeness. But in speaking to any of quality, they give them, as in English, their due title: if to an earl or marquis, they say, *vuestra señoria*, your lordship: if to a bishop, *vuestra señoria ilustrissima*, your most illustrious lordship: to the grandees, they say, *vuestra excelencia*, your excellence: to a prince, *vuestra alteza*, your highness: to the king, *vuestra magestad*, &c. All which titles are also used in the plural; as, *vuestras señorias*, *vuestras excelencias*, &c.

Conjugation of the auxiliary verb haver.

Indicative mood. Present tense.

Yo *hè*, I have.

tu *às*, thou hast.

el or *aquèl* *à*, he has.

Plural.

Nos or *vosotros avèmos*, or *bèmos*, we have.

vòs or *vosotros avèis*, ye have.

ellos or *aquèllos an*, they have.

Thus the pronouns *I*, *thou*, *he*, in the singular, and *we*, *ye*, *they*, in the plural, are used in the conjugating all tenses in every verb.

Preterimperfect.

Avia, I had.

avias, thou hadst.

avia, he had.

Plural.

Plural.

Aviámos, we had.

aviades, ye had.

avian, they had.

The first preterperfect.

Uve, I have had.

uviste, thou hast had.

uvo e buvo, he has had.

uvimos, we have had.

uvistes, ye have had.

uviéron, *buviéron*, they have had.

The second preterperfect.

To bè

tu às

aquél à, or *bà*

nosòtros bèmos, or *avèmos*

vosòtros avèis

èllos or *aquèllos àn*, or *bàn*

avido, I have had, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

Avia

avias

avia

aviámos

aviades

avian

avido, I had had, &c.

Future.

Aurè, I shall or will have.

auràs, thou shalt or wilt have.

aurà, he shall or will have.

aurèmos, we shall or will have.

Aurèys,

48 . The Spanish Grammar.

Avrèys, ye shall or will have.
avràn, they shall or will have.

Imperative mood.

àyas tu, have thou.
àya aquèl, let him have.
ayàmos nosòtros, let us have.
ayàys vosòtros, have ye.
àyan aquèllos, let them have.

The Spaniards, instead of this verb, often use the verb *tengo*; especially in the imperative mood. But of this more hereafter.

The optative mood

Is conjugated with these signs, *òxala*, I wish, *aunque*, although, *es menester que*, it is fit, necessary, convenient that.

Optative mood. . Present tense.

Oxala, aunque, es menester que,
àya, I may or can have.
àyas, thou mayest or canst have.
àya, he may or can have.
ayàmos, we may or can have.
ayàys, ye may or can have.
àyan, they may or can have.

Preterimperfect tense.

This tense has two terminations, as
Uvièra, uvièsse, I might or could have.
uvièras, uvièsses, thou mightest or couldst have.
uvièra, uvièsse, he might or could have.
uvièramos, uvièssemos, we might or could have.
uvièrades, uvièssedes, ye might or could have.
uvièran, uvièssen, they might or could have.

Preter-

Quando

Preterperfect.

àya

àyas

àya

ayàmos

ayàys

àyan

avido, when I have had, or I might have had, &c.

Aunque

Preterpluperfect.

Uvièra, or uvièsse

uvièras, or uvièsses

uvièra, or uvièsse

uvièramas, or uvièssemos

uvièrades, or uvièssedes

uvièran, or uvièssen

avido, though I had had, o! that I had had, &c.

Uncertain tense.

Avria, I would have.

avrias, thou wouldst have.

avria, he would have

avriamos, we would have.

avriades, ye would have.

avrian, they would have.

Future.

Uvière, o! that I may hereafter have, &c.

uvières.

uvière.

uvièremos.

uvièredes.

uvièren.

Second future.

*Avèrè**avràs**avrà**avèremos**avèrèis**avràn*} *avido*, when I shall hereafter have, &c.

Infinitive. Present tense.

Avèr, to have.

Preterperfect.

Avèr, *avido*, to have had.

The future.

Espèro de avèr, to have hereafter.

Gerund.

Avièndo, in having.

Participle of the preter tense.

Avido, had.

Participle of the future.

El que espèra de avèr, to have hereafter.

Before I proceed to the conjugation of the verb *ser*, to be, which in English is simple, I must observe, that in Spanish it has two significations; or more properly, this language has two distinct verbs of one signification, viz. *ser* to be, and *estàr*. The former shews the essence of any subject, or some permanent

permanent quality naturally inhering in it; as for example, *la leche es blanca*, milk is white; *soy hombre*, I am a man; *es caritativo*, he is charitable; *soy Cristiano*, I am a Christian; *ser soldado*, to be a soldier, &c. But the verb *estar* denotes only an accidental circumstance affirmed of any thing; as, *la mar està en leche*, the sea is calm; *ser casado*, to be married; *estar descubierto*, to be discovered; *ser amigos*, to be friends; *estar ocioso*, to be at leisure; *estoy cansado*, I am weary; *estuvè en Roma*, I have been at Rome; *estoy lejos de Paris*, I am far from Paris; *estarè en casa esta tarde*, I shall be at home this even; *estar àyrado*, or *amobinado*, to be angry; *estar borracho*, to be drunk; *estar hambriento*, to be hungry. Now you cannot say, *soy lejos de Paris*, for it would be as much nonsense as if in English I should say, I myself am the very space of ground that is between me and Paris; *estar borracho*, is to be drunk, but *ser borracho*, is to be a drunkard; *este hombre esta borracho*, this man is drunk; *este hombre es un borracho*, this man is a drunkard, a sot.

Indicative mood. Present tense.

<i>Yo soy,</i>	<i>yo estòy,</i> I am.
<i>tu ères,</i>	<i>tu estàs,</i> thou art.
<i>aquel ès,</i>	<i>està,</i> he is.
<i>nosotros somos,</i>	<i>estàmos,</i> we are.
<i>vosotros sois,</i>	<i>estàis,</i> ye are.
<i>aquellos son,</i>	<i>estàn,</i> they are.

Preterimperfect.

<i>èra,</i>	<i>estàva,</i> I was.
<i>èras,</i>	<i>estàvas,</i> thou wert, thou wast.
<i>era,</i>	<i>estàva,</i> he was.

*èramos,**èrades,**èran,**estàvamos,* we were.*estàvades,* ye were.*estàvan,* they were.

Preterdefinite.

*Fui,**fuiſte,**fuè,**fuimos,**fuiſtes,**fuèron,**eſtùve,* I have been:*eſtùviſte,* thou haſt been.*eſtùvo,* he has been.*eſtùvimos,* we have been.*eſtùviſtes,* ye have been.*eſtùvièron,* they have been.

Preterpluperfect.

*Hè ſido, or eſtado,**às**à**avèmos**avèis**àn*

I have been.

thou haſt been.

he has been.

we have been.

ye have been.

they have been.

Otherwise,

*ùve**ùviſte**ùvo**ùvimos**ùviſtes**ùvièron**ſido, or eſtado.*

Preterindefinite.

*Avia ſido, eſtado,**avias**avia**avíamos**aviades**avian*

I had been.

thou hadſt been.

he had been.

we had been.

ye had been.

they had been.

Future.

Future.

<i>Serè,</i>	<i>estarè,</i>	I shall or will be.
<i>seràs,</i>	<i>estaràs,</i>	thou shalt or wilt be.
<i>serà,</i>	<i>estarà,</i>	he shall or will be.
<i>serèmos,</i>	<i>estarèmos,</i>	we shall or will be.
<i>serèis</i>	<i>estarèis,</i>	ye shall or will be.
<i>seràn,</i>	<i>estaràn,</i>	they shall or will be.

Second future.

<i>He, or tengo de ser, estar,</i>	I must be, or ought to
<i>as de ser,</i>	<i>de estar,</i> thou. [be hereafter.
<i>a de ser,</i>	<i>de estar,</i> he.

Plural.

<i>Avèmos de ser,</i>	<i>de estar,</i>	we must be,	} hereafter.
<i>avèis de ser,</i>	<i>de estar,</i>	ye must be,	
<i>àn de ser,</i>	<i>de estar,</i>	they must be,	

Compounded tenses used in the Spanish.

<i>Avia</i>	} <i>de ser, or de estar.</i>
<i>avias</i>	
<i>avia</i>	

Plural.

<i>Aviamos</i>	} <i>de ser, or de estar.</i>
<i>aviades</i>	
<i>avian</i>	

Avia de estar en Roma el año passado, mas no pudè, I should, I ought to have been at Rome last year, but could not; as the preterperfect of the subjunctive in English.

Avrè }
avràs } *de ser, or de estàr.*
avrà }

Plural.

Avrèmos }
avrèis } *de ser, or de estàr.*
avràn }

Avrè de estàr a las diez en la Iglesia de San Pàblo,
 I must be at ten in St. Paul's church. These ex-
 amples may serve for all the other verbs.

The imperative mood.

Sè, està, be thou.

sea, està, let him be.

seamos, estèmos, let us be.

sed, estàd, be ye.

sean, estèn, let them be.

Optative and subjunctive.

òxala, es menester que, aunque, como,

Sèa, estè, when I am, O that I may be, al-

seas, estès, thou. [though I am, &c.

sea, estè, he.

seamos, estèmos, we.

seàis, estèis, ye.

sean, estèn, they.

Preterimperfect.

Fuèra, fuèsse estuvièra, estuvièsse, O that I could,
 might be, when I was, &c.

fuèras, fuèsses, estuvièras, estuvièsses, thou couldst, &c.

fuèra, fuèsse, estuvièra, estuvièsse, he could, might
 be, &c.

fuèramos,

fuèramos, fuèssèmós, estuvièramos, estuvièssèmós, we
could, might be, when we were.

fuèrades, fuèssedes, estuvièrades, estuvièssedes, ye could,
might be, ye were.

fuèran, fuèssen, estuvièran, estuvièssen, they could,
might be, they were.

Preterperfect.

Ayà sido or estàdo, when I have been, though I have, O
[that I might have been.

àyas when thou hast been.

àya when he has been.

ayàmos when we have been.

ayàis when ye have been.

àyan when they have been.

Preterpluperfect.

Uvièra, uvièsse sido, or estado, when I had been, O that
[I had been.

uvièras, uvièsses when thou hadst been, &c.

uvièra, uvièsse when he had been, &c.

uvièramos, uvièssèmós when we had been, &c.

uvièrades, uvièssedes when ye had been, &c.

uvièran, uvièssen when they had been, &c.

Uncertain tense.

Serìa, estarìa, I would be.

serìas, estarìas, thou wouldst be.

serìa, estarìa, he would be.

serìamos, estarìamos, we would be.

serìades, estarìades, ye would be.

serìan, estarìan, they would be.

Future.

Fuère, estuvière, when I shall be, O that I may
[hereafter be, though I may be hereafter.

fuères, estuvières, when thou shalt be, &c.

fuère, estuvière, when he shall be, &c.

fuèremos, estuvièremos, when we shall be, &c.

fuèredes, estuvièredes, when ye shall be, &c.

fuèren, estuvièren, when they shall be, &c.

Infinitive mood. Present tense.

Sèr, estàr; to be.

Preterperfect.

Avèr sido, avèr estàdo, to have been.

Future.

Avèr de ser, avèr de estàr, to be hereafter.

Gerund.

Sièndo, estàndo, in being.

Participle.

Sido, estàdo, been.

I have already said, that there are no more than three terminations, for all the verbs in the Spanish language, which are *ar*, *er*, *ir*; there can consequently be no more conjugations. The first conjugation has the present tense of the infinitive mood terminated in *ar*, the second in *er*, the third in *ir*. For the ease and benefit of the learner, I shall conjugate one of each, and at the end of each conjugation, I shall set down a list of verbs of the same termination, which are conjugated after the like manner as the example. I shall follow the same method with respect to the irregulars.

Con-

Conjugation of *amar*, to love, for the verbs terminated in *ar*.

Indicative mood. Present tense.

Singular.

Plural.

amo, I love.

amamos, we love.

amas, thou lovest.

amais, ye love.

ama, he loveth.

aman, they love.

Preterimperfect.

Singular.

Plural.

Amava, I did love.

amavamos, we did love.

amavas, thou didst love.

amavades, ye did love.

amava, he did love.

amavan, they did love.

Preterperfect definite.

Singular.

Plural.

Amè, I loved.

amamos, we loved.

amàste, thou lovedst.

amàstes, ye loved.

amò, he loved.

amàron, they loved.

So, *amè quando fui joven*, I loved when I was young, &c.

Preterperfect indefinite.

Hè or ùve amàdo, I have loved.

as, ùviste amàdo, thou hast loved.

à, ùvo amàdo, he hath loved.

havèmos, uvèmos amàdo, we had loved.

aveis, uvistes amàdo, ye have loved.

an, uvièron amàdo, they have loved.

Preterpluperfect.

Avia amàdo, I had loved.

avias thou hadst loved.

avia

avia amado, he had loved.

avíamos we had loved.

aviades ye had loved.

avian they had loved.

Future.

Singular.

Amarè, I shall or will love.

amaràs, thou shalt or wilt love.

amarà, he shall or will love.

Plural.

Amarèmos, we shall or will love.

amarèis, ye shall or will love.

amaràn, they shall or will love.

Second future.

He or tengo de amar, I must love.

as thou must love.

a he must love.

bèmos or avèmos we must love.

avèis ye must love.

àn they must love.

Compound tenses.

Avia de amar.

avias

avia

avíamos

aviades

avian

Avrè de amar.

avràs

avrà

avremos

avrèis

avran.

The imperative mood.

Ama tu, love thou.

àme el or aquèl, let him love.

avèmos

amèmos nosòtros, let us love.

amàd vosòtros, love ye.

àmen èllos, or *aquèllos*, let them love.

Optative and subjunctive. Present tense.

òxala, aunque, es menester que, como,

àme, I may love; though I do love.

àmes, thou mayest love; though thou dost love.

àme, he may love; though he doth love.

amèmos, we may love; though we do love.

amèis, ye may love; though ye do love.

àmen, they may love; though they do love.

Preterimperfect.

Si amàra, amàsse, when I did love, though I did love,
o! that I could or might love.

Si amàras, amàsses, when thou didst love, though thou
didst love, o! that thou couldst or might love.

Si amàra, amàsse, when he did love, though he did
love, o! that he could or might love.

Si amàramos, amàssèmos, when we did love, though we
did love, o! that we could or might love.

Si amàrades, amàssèdes, when ye did love, though ye
did love, o! that ye could or might love.

Si amàran, amàssen, when they did love, though they
did love, o! that they could or might love.

Preterperfect.

àya

àyas

àya

ayàmos

ayàis

àyan

amàdo, when I have, though I have loved, o!
that I could, o! that I might have loved.

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

Uvièra, or *uvièsse amado*, when I had loved, o! that I had loved, though I had loved.

uvièras, *uvièsses amado*, when thou hadst loved, o! that thou hadst loved, though thou hadst loved.

uvièra, *uvièsse amado*, when he had loved, o! that he had loved, though he had loved.

uvièramos, *uvièssenos amado*, when we had loved, o! that we had loved, though we had loved.

uvièrades, *uvièssedes amado*, when ye had loved, o! that ye had loved, though ye had loved.

uvièran, *uvièssen amado*, when they had loved, o! that they had loved, though they had loved.

Uncertain tense.

Amaria, I did love, or would love.

amarias, thou didst love, or wouldst love.

amaria, he did love, or would love.

amaríamos, we did love, or would love.

amariades, ye did love, or would love.

amarían, they did love, or would love.

First future.

Amare, when I shall or will love, though I shall love, [o! that I could hereafter love.

amares, when thou shalt or wilt love, &c.

amare, when he shall or will love, &c.

amaremos, when we shall or will love, &c.

amaredes, when ye shall or will love, &c.

amaren, when they shall or will love, &c.

Quando

Second future.

Huvière amado, when I shall have loved.

huvières amado, when thou shalt have loved.

huvière

buvière amado, when he shall have loved.

buviéremos amado, when we shall have loved.

buviéredes amado, when ye shall have loved.

buviéren amado, when they shall have loved.

Infinitive present.

Amàr, to love.

Preterperfect.

Avèr amado, to have loved.

Future.

Avèr, or *esperàr de amàr*, to love hereafter.

Gerund.

Amàndo, in loving.

First supine.

Amar, to love.

Second supine.

De sèr amado, to be loved.

Participle of the preterperfect.

Amado, loved.

A list of regular verbs terminating in *ar*, which are conjugated like *amar*.

Apartàr, to separate.

ayunàr, to fast.

apelàr, to appeal.

acomodàr, to fit.

apagàr, to quench, pacify.

apaziguàr, to pacify.

aprovechàr, to profit.

Amazàr,

- Amagàr*, to threaten.
afrentàr, to reproach, to disgrace.
averiguàr, to aver.
aventuràr, to hazard.
amedrantàr, to put in fear.
alzàr, to lift up, to exalt.
atàr, to tie, to bind.
azotàr, to scourge, to whip.
aborcàr, to hang up.
abogàr, to strangle, to drown, to quench.
alumbràr, to illuminate.
alabàr, to praise.
alquilàr, to hire.
adelantàr, to excell, to head.
animàr, to animate.
accusàr, to blame, to accuse.
aparejàr, to prepare.
acabàr, to finish.
amparàr, to protect.
abordàr, to board a ship.
arreatàr, to snatch.
arrancàr, to extirpate.
amanfàr, to tame.
ayudàr, to help or succour.
ababàr, to exhale.
abanderàr, to hoist the colours.
abandonàr, to abandon.
abaxàr, to allay, to humble, &c.
abogàr, to plead as a counsellor.
abundàr, to abound.
abortàr, to miscarry.
abotonàr, to button, to bud.
aforràr, to line.
abrigàr, to cherish.

Acampàr,

Acampàr, to encamp.
acariciàr, to cocker.
acatàr, to reverence.
aceleràr, to hasten.
acercàr, to approach.
adoràr, to adore.
afèàr, to defile.
adornàr, to adorn,

B.

Borràr, to blot.
besàr, to kiss.
baylàr, to dance.
buscàr, to seek.

C.

Cobràr, to get.
compràr, to buy.
cantàr, to sing.
cenàr, to sup.
contestàr, to contest.
curàr, to cure, to dress, as wounds, &c.
cortàr, to cut, to bark trees.
cabàr, to dig.
cazàr, to hunt.
caminàr, to travel.
condenàr, to condemn.
criàr, to nurse.
confrontàr, to confront.
comparàr, to compare.
callàr, to be silent.

D.

Disimulàr, to dissemble.
desfengañàr, to disabuse, undeceive.
domàr, to make tame.
desnudàr, to strip.

Descançar,

Descançar, to rest.

dexàr, to quit.

despreciàr, to despise.

desamparàr, to abandon.

declaràr, to declare.

desafiàr, to challenge.

disfamàr, to defame.

E.

Estimar, to esteem.

engañàr, to deceive.

encantàr, to enchant.

enseñàr, to teach.

esternudàr, to sneeze.

empeñar, to pawn.

entràr, to enter.

embiàr, to send.

F.

Fiàr, to trust, to confide in.

G.

Gastàr, to spend.

ganàr, to acquire, to gain.

H.

Hallàr, to find.

hablàr, to speak.

J.

Juràr, to swear.

jugàr, to judge.

injuriàr, to revile, to injure.

LL.

Lloràr, to weep.

llegàr, to draw near.

llamàr, to call.

Llagàr,

Llagàr, to wound.
llenàr, to fill.
llevar, to carry.
llanàr ò allanàr, to rain.

M.

Madrugàr, to rise early.
matàr, to kill.
manchàr, to spot.
mascàr, to chew.
mandàr, to command, to bequeath.
miràr, to look.
murmuràr, to murmur.

N.

Nadàr, to swim.
notàr, to mark.

P.

Peleàr, to fight.
pagàr, to pay.
porfiàr, to persist.
presentàr, to present.
preciàr, to esteem.
procuràr, to procure.
perdonàr, to pardon.

Q.

Quitàr, to take away.
quemàr, to burn.

R.

Recompensàr, to recompense.
remediàr, to cure.
reculàr, to retire.
rebusàr, to refuse.
rascàr, to tear.
reposar, to repose.
rezàr, to pray.

F

Robàr,

66 The Spanish Grammar.

Robàr, to rob.

**representàr*, to represent.

8.

Separàr, to separate.

saqueàr, to plunder.

sanàr, to cure.

sonàr, to sound.

sudàr, to sweat.

sitiàr, to besiege.

9.

Topàr, to meet with.

tragàr, to swallow.

tapàr, to stop, to cover.

U.

Usurpàr, to usurp.

usàr, to use.

visitàr, to visit.

verificàr, to verify.

vituperàr, to blame.

Como este verbo dàr tenga la irregularidad diferente de los otros verbos, por esto lo conjugo.

As this verb *dar* has its irregularity different from the other irregular verbs, I therefore shall conjugate it.

Present. Indicative.

Singular.

To dòy, I give.

tu dàs, thou givest.

el dà, he giveth.

Plural.

nosòtras dàmos, we give.

vosòtros dàis, ye give.

ellos dàn, they give.

Pre-

Preter imperfect.

Singular.

Dava, I did give.
davas, thou didst give.
dava, he did give.

Plural.

dávamos, we did give.
dávades, ye did give.
davan, they did give.

Perfect definite.

Singular.

Di, I gave.
diste, thou gavest.
dió, he gave.

Plural.

dimos, we gave.
distes, ye gave.
diéron, they gave.

Perfect indefinite.

Singular.

Hè dado, I have given.
às dado, thou hast given.
à dado, he has given.

Plural.

èmos ò havèmos dado, we have given.
avèis, ye have given.
àn, they have given.

Idem.

Singular.

ùve dado, I have given.
ùviste dado, thou hast given.
ùvo, he has given.

Plural.

ùvimos, dado we have given.
ùvistes dado, ye have given.
uviéron dado, they have given.

Preterpluperfect.

Singular.

Avia dàdo, I had given.
avias dàdo, thou hadst given.
avia dàdo, he had given.

Plural.

Aviamos dàdo, we had given.
aviades dàdo, ye had given.
avian dàdo, they had given.

Future.

Singular.

Darè, I shall or will give.
daràs, thou wilt give.
darà, he will give.

Plural.

darèmos, we will give.
darèis, ye will give.
daràn, they will give.

Idem.

Singular.

He ò tengo de dâr,
às
à

I must give hereafter.
 thou must give hereafter.
 he must give hereafter.

Plural.

èmos ò avèmos de dâr,
aveis
an

we must give hereafter.
 ye must give hereafter.
 they must give hereafter.

Tiempos compuestos.

Compound tenses.

Singular.

Avia de dâr, I was obliged to give.
avias de dâr, thou wast obliged to give.
avia de dâr, he was obliged to give.

Plural.

Plural.

Aviàmos de dâr, we were obliged to give.

avïades de dâr, ye were obliged to give.

avïan de dâr, they were obliged to give.

Idem.

Singular.

Avrè de dâr, I shall be obliged to give.

avràs de dâr, thou shalt be obliged to give.

avrà de dâr, he shall be obliged to give.

Plural.

Avrèmos de dâr, we shall be obliged to give.

avrèis de dâr, ye shall be obliged to give.

avràn de dâr, they shall be obliged to give.

These compound tenses mark a necessity or obligation.

Imperative.

Singular.

Da tu, give thou.

dè el, let him give.

Plural.

Dèmos nosòtros, let us give.

dàd vosòtros, give ye.

den ellos à aquèllos, let them give.

Optative and subjunctive.

Es menester que, aunque, òxala, si.

Singular.

Dè, that I may give.
dès, thou mayst give.
dè, he may give.

Plural.

dèmos, we may give.
dèis, ye may give.
dèn, they may give.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Dièsse, I should give.
dièsses, thou shouldst give.
dièsse, he should give.

Plural.

dièssemos, we should give.
dièssedes, ye should give.
dièssen, they should give.

Idem.

Singular.

Dièra, I should give.
dièras, thou shouldst give.
dièra, he should give.

Plural.

dièssemos, we should give.
dièrades, ye should give.
dièran, they should give.

Perfect.

Singular.

Quando àya dàdo, when I have given.
quando ayàs dàdo, when thou hast given.
quando àya dàdo, when he has given.

Plural.

Quando ayàmos dàdo, when we have given.
quando ayàis dàdo, when ye have given.
quando àyan dàdo, when they have given.

Preterpluperfect.

Singular.

Quando uvièsse, ò *uvièra dàdo*, when I had given.
quando uvièsse, ò *uvièras dàdo*, when thou hadst given.
quando uvièsse, ò *uvièra dàdo*, when he had given.

Plural.

Plural.

Uvièssemos ò uvièramos dàdo, we had given.
uvièssedes ò uvièrades dàdo, ye had given.
uvièssen ò uvièran dàdo, they had given.

Indefinite tense.

Singular.

Daria, I would give.
darias, thou wouldst give.
daria, he would give.

Plural.

dariamos, we would give.
dariades, ye would give.
darian, they would give.

Future.

Singular.

Quando uvière dàdo, when I shall have given.
quando uvières dàdo, when thou shalt have given.
quando uvière dàdo, when he shall have given.

Plural.

Quando uvièremos dàdo, when we shall have given.
quando uvièredes dàdo, when ye shall have given.
quando uvièren dàdo, when they shall have given.

Idem.

Singular.

Si dière, if I shall give.
si dières, if thou shalt give.
si dière, if he shall give.

Plural.

Si dièremos, if we shall give.
si dièredes, if ye shall give.
si dièren, if they shall give.

Infinitive.

Dàr, to give.

Preterperfect.

Avèr dàdo, to have given.

Future.

Avèr de dàr, to give hereafter.

Participle of the preterperfect.

Dàdo, given.

Gerund.

Dàndo, in giving.*Conjugation of irregular verbs in ar.*

Note, that the verb *almorzar*, and all conjugated like it, are irregular in the three persons singular, and in the third person plural of the present tense, indicative mood; in the second and third of the singular, and the third of the plural in the imperative mood; in the three persons singular, and third plural of the optative and subjunctive mood in the present tense.

Indicative mood. Present tense.

Singular.

Almuèrzo, I breakfast.*almuèrzas*, thou dost breakfast.*almuèrza*, he doth breakfast.

Plural.

Almorzàmos, we breakfast.*almorzàis*, ye breakfast.*almuèrzàn*, they breakfast.

Preter-

Preterimperfect.

Singular.

Almorzàva, I did breakfast.

almorzàvas, thou didst breakfast.

almorzàva, he did breakfast.

Plural.

Almorzàvamos, we did breakfast.

almorzàvades, ye did breakfast.

almorzàvan, they did breakfast.

Preterperfect definite.

Singular.

Almorzè, I have breakfasted.

almorzàste, thou hast breakfasted.

almorzò, he has breakfasted.

Plural.

Almorzàmos, we have breakfasted.

almorzàstes, ye have breakfasted.

almorzàron, they have breakfasted.

Preterperfect indefinite.

Hè almorzàdo, I have breakfasted.

às almorzàdo, thou hast breakfasted.

à almorzàdo, he has breakfasted.

bèmos or *avèmos almorzàdo*, we have breakfasted.

avèis almorzàdo, ye have breakfasted.

àn almorzàdo, they have breakfasted.

Or otherwise,

Idem.

ùve almorzàdo, I have breakfasted.

uviste almorzàdo, thou hast breakfasted.

uvò almorzàdo, he has breakfasted.

ùvimos

huvimos almorzàdo, we have breakfasted.

huvistes almorzàdo, ye have breakfasted.

huvieron, they have breakfasted.

The preterpluperfect.

Avia almorzàdo, I had breakfasted.

avias almorzàdo, thou hadst breakfasted.

avia almorzàdo, he had breakfasted.

avíamos almorzàdo, we had breakfasted.

avíades almorzàdo, ye had breakfasted.

avian almorzàdo, they had breakfasted.

First future.

Almorzarè, I shall or will breakfast.

almorzaràs, thou shalt or wilt breakfast.

almorzarà, he shall or will breakfast.

almorzarèmos, we shall or will breakfast.

almorzarèis, ye shall or will breakfast.

almorzaràn, they shall or will breakfast.

Second future.

Hè or tèngo de almorzàr, I must breakfast.

às thou must breakfast.

à he must breakfast.

havèmos we must breakfast.

avèis ye must breakfast.

àn they must breakfast.

Avia

avias

avia

avíamos

avíades

avian

} *de almorzàr.*

<i>Avrè</i>	}	<i>de almorzàr.</i>
<i>avràs</i>		
<i>avrà</i>		
<i>avremos</i>		
<i>avrèis</i>		
<i>avràn</i>	}	

Imperative mood.

Almuèrza tu, do thou breakfast.

almuèrze el, let him breakfast.

almorzèmos nosòtros, let us breakfast.

almorzàd vosòtros, breakfast ye.

almuèrzen ellos, let them breakfast.

Optative and subjunctive. Present tense.

Es menestèr que, aunque, como, si.

Though I do, when I do, O that I may breakfast,
I can breakfast.

Singular.

Almuèrze, I may breakfast.

almuèrzes, thou mayst breakfast.

almuèrze, he may breakfast.

Plural.

Almorzèmos, we may breakfast.

almorzèis, ye may breakfast.

almuèrzen, they may breakfast.

Preterimperfect.

Si almorzàra, almorzàsse, I might breakfast, when I
did, though I did, when I could breakfast.

si almorzàras almorzàsses, thou mightst breakfast, &c.

si almorzàra, almorzàsses, he might breakfast, &c.

si almorzàramos, almorzàssèmos, we might breakfast, &c.

si almorzàrades, almorzàssèdes, ye might breakfast, &c.

si almorzàran, almorzàssen, they might breakfast, &c.

The

The preterperfect.

àya almorzàdo, when I might have breakfasted, though I have breakfasted, O that I might, I could have breakfasted.

àyas almorzàdo, when thou mightst have breakfasted, &c.

àya almorzàdo, when he might have breakfasted, &c.

ayàmos almorzàdo, when we might have breakfasted, &c.

ayàis almorzàdo, when ye might have breakfasted, &c.

àyan almorzàdo, when they might have breakfasted, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

Uvièra, or *uvièsse almorzàdo*, though, when, O that I had breakfasted.

uvièras uvièsses almorzàdo, when thou hadst breakfasted, &c.

uvièra uvièsse almorzàdo, when he had breakfasted, &c.

uvièramos uvièssemos almorzàdo, when we had breakfasted, &c.

uvièrades uvièssedes almorzàdo, when ye had breakfasted, &c.

uvièran uvièssen almorzàdo, when they had breakfasted, &c.

Almorzària, I should breakfast.

almorzàrias, thou shouldst breakfast.

almorzària, he should breakfast.

almorzàriamos, we should breakfast.

almorzàriades, ye should breakfast.

almorzàrian, they should breakfast.

First future.

Almorzàre, when I shall or will, O that I may hereafter breakfast.

almorzàres, when thou shalt or wilt, O that thou mayest hereafter breakfast.

almorzàre, when he shall or will, O that he may hereafter breakfast.

almorzàremos, when we shall or will, O that we may hereafter breakfast.

almorzàredes, when ye shall or will, O that ye may hereafter breakfast.

almorzàren, when they shall or will, O that they may hereafter breakfast.

Second future.

Uvière almorzàdo, when, though I shall have breakfasted.

uvières almorzàdo, when, though thou shalt have breakfasted.

uvière almorzàdo, when, though he shall have breakfasted.

uvièremos almorzàdo, when, though we shall have breakfasted.

uvièredes almorzàdo, when, though ye shall have breakfasted.

uvièren almorzàdo, when, though they shall have breakfasted.

Infinitive mood. Present tense.

Almorzàr, to breakfast.

Preterperfect.

Aver almorzàdo, to have breakfasted.

Future.

Future.

Avèr, ò esperàr de almorzàr, to have breakfast hereafter.

Gerund.

Almorzàndo, in breakfasting.

First supine.

Almorzàr, to breakfast.

Second supine.

De ser almorzàdo, to have breakfasted.

Participle of the preterperfect.

Almorzàdo, breakfasted.

A list of irregular verbs terminated in *ar*, and which are declined like *almorzàr*.

A.

Acostàr-se, to lie, to sit ; *acuesto me*, I lie.

acordàr-se, *yo me acuerdo*, to remember, I remember.

aprovar, *yo apruebo*, to approve, I approve.

atronàr, *yo atruèno*, to thunder, I thunder.

amolàr, *yo amuèlo*, to grind, to forge, I grind.

avergonzàr-se, to be ashamed ; *mi averguènzo*, I am ashamed.

assolàr, to lay waste, to fun ; *assuèlo*, I waste.

apostàr, to lay a wager ; *apuèsto*, I lay a wager.

C.

Consolàr, *yo consuelo*, to comfort, I comfort.

contàr, *yo cuènto*, to tell, to reckon, I reckon.

colgàr, *yo cuèlgo*, to hang by, I hang by.

As

As derivatives are conjugated from their primitives,
it is needless to set them down.

D.

Desconsolàr, desconsuèlo.

descolgàr, descuèlgo.

desfollàr, to flay, to skin, defuello.

descontàr, descuènto.

E.

*Encontràr, yo encuèntro, to meet with, I meet with ;
esforzàr-se, yo me esfuèrço, I exert myself.*

F.

Forzàr, yo fuèrço, to ravish, I ravish.

J.

Jugàr, y juègo, to play, I play.

M.

Mostràr, yo muèstro, to shew, I shew.

P.

Provàr, yo pruèvo, to try, I try.

reprovàr, repruèvo, I reprove.

regoldàr, yo reguèllo, to belch, I belch.

rogàr, yo ruègo, to ask, I ask.

S.

Soltàr, yo suèlto, to loose, to abate, I loose.

T.

Trocàr, yo truèca, to truck, I truck.

Conjugation of the irregular verb *confessar*, to confess, acknowledge.

Indicative mood. Present tense.

Confieſſo, I do confess.
confieſſas, thou doſt confess.
confieſſa, he doth confess.
confieſſamos, we do confess.
confieſſais, ye do confess.
confieſſan, they do confess.

Preterimperfect.

Confieſſava, I did confess.
confieſſavas, thou didſt confess.
confieſſava, he did confess.
confieſſavamos, we did confess.
confieſſavades, ye did confess.
confieſſavan, they did confess.

Preterperfect definite.

Confieſſe, I confefſed.
confieſſaſte, thou didſt confefſe.
confieſſo, he hid confefſe.
confieſſamos, we did confefſe.
confieſſaſtes, or *confieſſaſteis*, ye did confefſe.
confieſſaron, they did confefſe.

Preterperfect indefinite.

Hè confieſſado, I have confefſed.
às confieſſado, thou haſt confefſed.
à confieſſado, he has confefſed.
hèmos or *avèmos confieſſado*, we have confefſed.
avèis confieſſado, ye have confefſed.
àn confieſſado, they have confefſed.

Other-

Otherwise,

uve confessado, I have confessed.
uviste confessado, thou hast confessed.
uvo confessado, he has confessed.
uvimos confessado, ye have confessed.
uvistes confessado, we have confessed.
uvieron confessado, they have confessed.

Preterpluperfect.

Avia confessado, I had confessed.
avias confessado, thou hadst confessed.
avia confessado, he had confessed.
aviamos confessado, we had confessed.
aviades confessado, ye had confessed.
avian confessado, they had confessed.

Future.

Confessarè, I shall or will confess.
confessaràs, thou shalt or wilt confess.
confessarà, he shall or will confess.
confessarèmos, we shall or will confess.
confessarèis, ye shall or will confess.
confessaràn, they shall or will confess.

Hè or tengo de confessar, I must or shall confess.
às de confessar, thou must or shalt confess.
à de confessar, he must or shall confess.
bemos or avemos de confessar, we must or shall confess.
avèis de confessar, ye must or shall confess.
àn de confessar, they must or shall confess.

G

Compound

Compound tenses.

Avia
avias
avia
aviamos
aviades
avian

} *de confessar.*

Avrè
avràs
avrà
avrèmos
avrèis
avràn

} *de confessar.*

The imperative mood.

Confiessa tu, do thou confess.

confiessa el or aquèl, let him confess.

confessemos nosotros, let us confess.

confessad vosotros, confess ye.

confiessen aquellos or ellos, let them confess.

Optative and subjunctive. Present tense.

Es menester que, aunque, como, òxala,

Quando confiessa, when I do, though I do, I may
 [confess, O that I may confess.

quando confiesses, when thou dost confess, &c.

quando confiessa, when he doth confess, &c.

quando confessemos, when we do confess, &c.

quando confiessis, when ye do confess, &c.

quando confiessen, when they do confess, &c.

Preterimperfect.

Si confesara, confesasse, I might, did, or could confess.

si confesaras, confessasses, thou mightst, didst, or couldst confess.

si confesara, confesasse, he might, did, or could confess.

si confesáramos, confessásemos, we might, did, or could confess.

si confesarades, confessádes, ye might, did, or could confess.

si confesaran, confessassen, they might, did, or could confess.

Preterperfect.

aya confesado, I could or might have confessed, when I have confessed.

ayas confesado, thou couldst or mightst have confessed, when thou hast confessed.

aya confesado, he could or might have confessed, when he hath confessed.

ayamos confesado, we could or might have confessed, when we have confessed.

ayais confesado, ye could or might have confessed, when ye have confessed.

ayan confesado, they could or might have confessed, when they have confessed.

Preterpluperfect.

Uvièra, uvièsse confesado, when I had confessed.

uvièras, uvièsses confesado, when thou hadst confessed.

uvièra, uvièsse confesado, when he had confessed.

uvièramos, uvièssemos confesado, when we had confessed.

uvièrades, uvièssedes confessado, when ye had confessed.
uvièran, uvièssen confessado, when they had confessed.

Uncertain tense.

Confessaria, I would or should confess.
confessarias, thou wouldst or shouldst confess.
confessaria, he would or should confess.
confessariamos, we would or should confess.
confessariades, ye would or should confess.
confessarian, they would or should confess.

First future.

Confessare, when, though I shall or will confess.
confessares, when, though thou shalt or wilt confess.
confessare, when, though he shall or will confess.
confessaremos, when, though we shall or will confess.
confessàredes, when, though ye shall or will confess.
confessaren, when, though they shall or will confess.

Second future.

Uvière confessado, when I shall have confessed.
uvières confessado, when thou shalt have confessed.
uvière confessado, when he shall have confessed.
uvièremos confessado, when we shall have confessed.
uvièredes confessado, when ye shall have confessed.
uvièren confessado, when they shall have confessed.

Infinitive mood. Present tense.

Confessar, to confess.

Preterperfect.

Avèr confessado, to have confessed.

Future.

Avèr or esperar de confessar, to confess hereafter.

Gerund.

Gerund.

Confessando, in confessing.

First supine.

A confessar, to confess.

Second supine.

De ser confessado, to be confessed.

Participle of the preterperfect.

Confessado, confessed.

A list of irregular verbs conjugated after the manner
of *confessar*.

A.

Acertàr, *yo acierto*, to be right, I am right.

adestràr, *yò adiestro*, to make apt, I make apt.

alentàr, *yo aliento*, to take breath, I take breath.

apascèntar, *apasciento*, to feed, I feed.

apretàr, *aprieto*, to strain close, I strain close.

arrèndar, *arriendo*, to reign in, I reign in.

atravèsar, *atravièssè*, to traverse, I traverse.

avèntar, *aviènto*, to fan, I fan.

C.

Calentàr, *caliento*, to warm, I warm.

cerràr, *cièrro*, to lock in, I lock in.

tomençàr, *comienço*, to begin, I begin.

concertàr, *concierto*, to agree, I agree.

D.

Desenterràr, desentièrro, to dig, I dig out of the
[earth.

despertàr, despièrto, to awaken, I awaken.

desterràr, destièrro, to banish, I banish.

E.

Emendàr, emièndo, to reform, I reform.

empedràr, empièdro, to pave, I pave.

encerràr, encièrro, to shut in, I shut in.

encomendàr, encamièndo, to recommend, I recom-
[mend.

enterràr, entièrro, to bury, I bury.

erràr, yèrro, to wander, I wander.

escarmentàr, escarmiènto, to be warned.

estregàr, estriègo, to curry, I curry.

F.

Fregàr, friègo, to rub, to chafe, I chafe.

G.

Governàr, gobièrno, to govern, I govern.

I.

Invernàr, invièrno, to winter, I winter.

M.

Manifestàr, maniifièsto, to evince, I evince.

N.

Negàr, niègo, to deny, I deny.

P.

Pensàr, piènso, to think, I think.

Quebràr, quièbro, to break, I break.

R.

Regàr, riègo, to water, I water.

remendar, remièndo, to botch, to mend, I mend.

renegàr, reniègo, to apostatize, I apostatize.

S.

Segàr, siègo, to mow, to reap, to cut, I mow, I cut.

sentàrse, yo me siènto, to sit, I sit.

sossegàr, sossiego, to pacify, I pacify.

T.

Temblàr, tièmblo, to tremble, I tremble.

tentàr, tiènto, to essay, I essay.

tropezàr, tropièzo, to stumble, I stumble.

*templàr, tièmplo, to temper, to rule, to moderate,
to order, I temper, I rule, I moderate, I order.*

Conjugation of a reciprocal verb in *ar* irregular.

Holgàrse, to be glad.

Indicative mood. Present tense.

Me buèlgo, I am glad.

te buèlgas, thou art glad.

se buèlga, he is glad.

Plural.

Nos bolgàmas, we are glad.

os bolgàis, ye are glad.

se buèlgan, they are glad.

Preterimperfect.

*Me bolgàva, I was glad.**te bolgàvas, thou wert glad.**se bolgàva, he was glad.*

Plural.

*Nos bolgàvamos, we were glad.**os bolgàvades, ye were glad.**se bolgàvan they were glad.*

Preterperfect definite.

*Me bolguè, I was glad.**te bolgàste, thou wert glad.**se bolgò, he was glad.*

Plural.

*Nos bolgàmos, we were glad.**os bolgàstes, ye were glad.**se bolgàren, they were glad.*

Preterperfect indefinite.

*Me he bolgàdo, I have been glad.**te has bolgàdo, thou hast been glad.**se ha bolgàdo, he has been glad.*

Plural.

*Nos emos bolgàdo, we have been glad.**os aveis bolgàdo, ye have been glad.**se han bolgàdo, they have been glad.*

Preterpluperfect.

*Me havia bolgàdo, I had been glad.**te havia bolgàdo, thou hadst been glad.**se havia bolgàdo, he had been glad.*

Plural

Plural.

Nos aviamos bolgado, we had been glad.
os aviades bolgado, ye had been glad.
se avian bolgado, they had been glad.

Singular.

First future.

Me bolgarè, I shall or will be glad.
te bolgaràs, thou shalt or wilt be glad.
se bolgarà, he shall or will be glad.

Plural.

Nos bolgarèmos, we shall or will be glad.
os bolgarèis, ye shall or will be glad.
se bolgaràn, they shall or will be glad.

Singular.

Second future.

Me be or tengo de bolgar, I must be glad.
te as or tienes de bolgar, thou must be glad.
se ha or tiene de bolgar, he must be glad.

Plural.

Nos avemos or tenemos de bolgar, we must be glad.
os aveis or teneis de bolgar, ye must be glad.
se han or tienen de bolgar, they must be glad.

Compound tenses.

Me avia de bolgar, I ought to have been glad.
te aviàs de bolgar, thou oughtst to have been glad.
se avia de bolgar, he ought to have been glad.

Plural

Nos aviamos de bolgar, we ought to have been glad.
os aviades de bolgar, ye ought to have been glad.
se avian de bolgar, they ought to have been glad.

Second.

Me avrè de bolgar, I am obliged to be glad.
te avràs de bolgar, thou art obliged to be glad.
se avrà de bolgar, he is obliged to be glad.

Plural.

Plural.

Nos avrèmos de bolgàr, we are obliged to be glad.
os avrèis de bolgàr, ye are obliged to be glad.
se avràn de bolgàr, they are obliged to be glad.

Imperative mood.

Huelgate, be thou glad.
buèlguese, let him be glad.

Plural.

Holgembfnas, let us be glad.
bolgados, be ye glad.
buèlguense, let them be glad.

Optative and subjunctive mood, present tense,
aunque, though; *como*, as.

Me buèlgue, I may or can be glad.
te buelgues, thou mayst or canst be glad.
se buelgue, he may or can be glad.

Plural.

Nos bolguemos, we may or can be glad.
os bolguèis, ye may or can be glad.
se buelguen, they may or can be glad.

Preterimperfect.

Me bolgàra, I might or could be glad.
te bolgàras, thou mightst or couldst be glad.
se bolgàra, he might or could be glad.

Plural.

Nos bolgàramos, we might or could be glad.
os bolgàrades, ye might or could be glad.
se bolgàran, they might or could be glad.

Second imperfect.

Me bolgàsse, I should or would be glad.

te bolgàsses, thou shouldst or wouldst be glad.

se bolgàsse, he should or would be glad.

Plural.

Nos bolgàssemos, we should or would be glad.

os bolgàsseades, ye should or would be glad.

se bolgàsssen, they should or would be glad.

Preterperfect.

Me aya bolgàdo, I may have been glad.

te aya bolgàdo, thou mayst have been glad.

se aya bolgàdo, he may have been glad.

Plural.

Nos àyamos bolgàdo, we may have been glad.

os ayais bolgàdo, ye may have been glad.

se ayan bolgàdo, they may have been glad.

Preterpluperfect.

Me buvièra bolgàdo, I might, could, have or had been glad.

te buvièras bolgàdo, thou mightst, couldst, have or had been glad.

se buvièra bolgàdo, he might, could, have or had been glad.

Plural.

Nos buvièramos bolgàdo, we might, could, have or had been glad.

os buvièrades bolgàdo, ye might, could, have or had been glad.

se buvièran bolgàdo, they might, could, have or had been glad.

Idem.

Idem.

Me buvièsse bolgàdo, I might, could, have or had been glad.

te buvièsses bolgàdo, thou mightst, couldst, have or had been glad.

se buvièsse bolgàdo, he might, could, have or had been glad.

Plural.

Nos buvièssemos bolgàdo, we might, could, have or had been glad.

os buvièssedes bolgàdo, ye might, could, have or had been glad.

se buvièssen bolgàdo, they might, could, have or had been glad.

Uncertain tense.

Me bolgaria si, I would be glad if.

te bolgarias si, thou wouldst be glad if.

te bolgaria si, he would be glad if.

Plural.

Nos bolgariamos si, we would be glad if.

os bolgariades si, ye would be glad if.

se bolgarian si, they would be glad if.

First future.

Me bolgàre, when I shall have been glad.

te bolgàres, when thou shalt have been glad.

se bolgàre, when he shall have been glad.

Plural.

Nos bolgàremos, when we shall have been glad.

os bolgàredes, when ye shall have been glad.

se bolgàren, when they shall have been glad.

Second

Second future.

Me buvière bolgado, I shall have been glad.
te buvières bolgado, thou shalt have been glad.
se buvière bolgado, he shall have been glad.

Plural.

Nos buviéremos bolgado, we shall have been glad.
os buviéredes bolgado, ye shall have been glad.
se buviéren bolgado, they shall have been glad.

Infinitive.

Holgarse, to be glad.

Preter.

Aversese bolgado, to have or had been glad.

Future.

Averse de holgar, to be about to be glad.

Gerund.

Holgándose, in being glad.

Preter.

Holgado, glad.

Conjugation of verbs regular in (er) *leer*, to read.

Indicative mood. Present tense.

Lèo, I read.
lèes, thou readest.
lèe, he readeth.
lèemos, we read.
lèeis, ye read.
lèèn, they read.

Preterimperfect.

Leía, I did read.*leías*, thou didst read.*leía*, he did read.*leíamos*, we did read.*leíades*, ye did read.*leían*, they did read.

Preterperfect definite.

Ley, I read, or have read.*leíste*, thou hast read.*leyò*, he has read.*leímos*, we have read.*leístes*, ye have read.*leyeron*, they have read.

Preterperfect indefinite.

He or *uve leydo*, I have read.*as uviste leydo*, thou hast read.*à uvo leydo*, he has read.*bemos* or *avèmos uvimos leydo*, we have read.*avèis uvistes leydo*, ye have read.*àn uvièron leydo*, they have read.

Preterpluperfect.

Avia leydo, I had read.*avias leydo*, thou hadst read.*avia leydo*, he had read.*avíamos leydo*, we had read.*aviades leydo*, ye had read.*avian leydo*, they had read.

First future.

Leerè, I shall or will read.
leeràs, thou shalt or wilt read.
leerà, he shall or will read.
leerèmos, we shall or will read.
leerèis, ye shall or will read.
leeràn, they shall or will read.

Second future.

This tense implies a necessity or obligation, I must read.

He or *tengo de leèr*, I must read.
as or *tienes de leèr*, thou must read.
a or *tiene de leèr*, he must read.
avèmos or *tenèmos de leèr*, we must read.
aveis or *tenèis de leèr*, ye must read.
àn or *tiènen de leèr*, they must read.

Compound tenses.

Avia de leèr, I ought to have read.
avèas de leèr, thou oughtst to have read.
aviades de leèr, he ought to have read.
aviamos de leèr, we ought to have read.
aviades de leèr, ye ought to have read.
avian de leèr, they ought to have read.

Aurè de leèr, I must read.
avràs de leèr, thou must read.
avrà de leèr, he must read.
avrèmos de leèr, we must read.
avrèis de leèr, ye must read.
avràn de leèr, they must read.

Aurè de leèr las oraciones esta noche,
 I must read the prayers to-night.

Imperative mood.

Lee tu, read thou.

lea aquel or *el*, let him read.

leamos nosotros, let us read.

leed vosotros, read ye.

lean ellos or *aquellos*, let them read.

Optative and subjunctive, present tense.

òxala, *es menester que*, *aunque*, *como*,

Lèa, when I read, though I read, I can read, O
[that I may read.

lèas, when thou readest, &c.

lèa, when he read, &c.

leamos, when we read, &c.

leais, when ye read, &c.

leàn, when they read, &c.

Preterimperfect.

Si leyèra, *leyèsse*, when I did read, I might read, I
[could read,

si leyèras, *leyèsses*, when thou didst read, &c.

si leyèra, *leyèsse*, when he did read, &c.

si leyèramos, *leyèssèmos*, when we did read, &c.

si leyèrades, *leyèssèdes*, when ye did read, &c.

si leyèran, *leyèssen*, when they did read, &c.

Preterperfect.

àya leydo, I might, could have read, when, though
[I have read.

àyas leydo, thou mightst, couldst have read, &c.

àya leydo, he might, could have read, &c.

ayamos leydo, we might, could have read, &c.

ayais leydo, ye might, could have read, &c.

àyan leydo, they might, could have read, &c.

The preterpluperfect.

Uvièra, uvièsse leydo, when I had, though I had, O
[that I had read.

uvièras, uvièsses leydo, when thou hadst read, &c.

uvièra, uvièsse leydo, when he had read, &c.

uvièramos, uvièssemos leydo, when we had read, &c.

uvièrades, uvièssedes leydo, when ye had read, &c.

uvièran, uvièssen leydo, when they had read, &c.

Uncertain tense.

Leerìa, I would read.

leerìas, thou wouldst read.

leerìa, he would read.

leerìamos, we would read.

leerìades, ye would read.

leerìan, they would read.

First future.

Quando leyère, when, though I shall or will read.

quando leyères, when, though thou shalt or wilt read.

quando leyère, when, though he shall or will read.

quando leyèremos, when, though we shall or will read.

quando leyèredes, when, though ye shall or will read.

quando leyèren, when, though they shall or will read.

Second future.

Quando uvière leydo, when I shall have read.

quando uvières leydo, when thou shalt have read.

quando uvière leydo, when he shall have read.

quando uvièremos leydo, when we shall have read.

quando uvièredes leydo, when ye shall have read.

quando uvièren leydo, when they shall have read.

Infinitive. Present tense.

Leer, to read.

H

Pre-

Preterperfect.

Aver leído, to have read.

The future.

Aver de leer, to read hereafter.

Gerund.

Leyendo, in reading.

The first supine.

A leer, to read.

Second supine.

De ser leído, to be read.

Participle of the present.

El que lee, reading.

Participle of the preter.

Leydo, read.

Conjugation of the regular verb responder.

Indicative mood. Present tense.

Respondo, I answer.

respondes, thou dost answer.

responde, he doth answer.

respondemos, we do answer.

respondéis, ye do answer.

responden, they do answer.

Preterimperfect.

Respondia, I did answer.

respondias, thou didst answer.

respondia,

respondia, he did answer.
respondíamos, we did answer.
respondíades, ye did answer.
respondían, they did answer.

Preterperfect definite.

Respondí, I answered.
respondiste, thou didst answer.
respondió, he did answer.
respondimos, we did answer.
respondistes, ye did answer.
respondieron, they did answer.

The preterperfect indefinite.

Hè úve respondido, I have answered.
às uviste respondido, thou hast answered.
à úvo respondido, he has answered.
bemos uvimos respondido, we have answered.
avèys uvistes respondido, ye have answered.
àn uvièron respondido, they have answered.

Preterpluperfect.

Avia respondido, I had answered.
avias respondido, thou hadst answered.
avía respondido, he had answered.
avíamos respondido, we had answered.
avíades respondido, ye had answered.
avían respondido, they had answered.

First future.

Responderè, I shall or will answer.
responderàs, thou shalt or wilt answer.
responderà, he shall or will answer.
responderèmos, we shall or will answer.

100 The Spanish Grammar.

responderèis, ye shall or will answer.

responderàn, they shall or will answer.

Second future.

He or *tenga de responder*, I must answer.

às or *tiènes de responder*, thou must answer.

à or *tiène de responder*, he must answer.

avèmos *tenemos de responder*, we must answer.

avèis *tenèis de responder*, ye must answer.

an *tiènen de responder*, they must answer.

Compound tenses.

Avia de responder, I ought to answer.

avias de responder, thou oughtst to answer.

avia de responder, he ought to answer.

aviàmos de responder, we ought to answer.

aviades de responder, ye ought to answer.

avian de responder, they ought to answer.

Avrè de responder, I must answer.

avràs de responder, thou must answer.

avrà de responder, he must answer.

avrèmos de responder, we must answer.

avrèis de responder, ye must answer.

avràn de responder, they must answer.

The imperative mood.

Respònde tu, answer thou.

respònda el or *aquel*, let him answer.

respòndàmos nosotros, let us answer.

responded vosotros, answer ye.

respòndan ellos or *aquellos*, let them answer.

Optative

Optative and subjunctive. Present tense.

Es menester que, aunque, quando, como, òxala,
Respònda, when, though I do, may or can answer.
respòndas, when, tho' thou dost, mayst, or canst answer.
respònda, when, though he doth, may, or can answer.
respondàmos, when, tho' we do, may, or can answer.
respondàis, when, though ye do, may, or can answer.
respòndan, when, though they do, may, or can answer.

Preterimperfect.

Si respondièra, respondièsse, when, though I did, might, or could answer.
si respondièras, respondièsses, when, though thou didst, mightst, or couldst answer.
si respondièra, respondièsse, when, though he did, might, or could answer.
si respondièramos, respondièssemos, when, though we did, might, or could answer.
si respondièrades, respondièssedes, when, though ye did, might, or could answer.
si respondièran, respondièssen, when, though they did, might, or could answer.

Preterperfect.

àya respondido, when, though I have, might have, could have answered.
àyas respondido, when, though thou hast, mightst have, couldst have answered.
àya respondido, when, though he has, might have, could have answered.
ayàmos respondido, when, though we have, might have, could have answered.

ayais respondido, when, though ye have, might have, could have answered.

ayan respondido, when, though they have, might have, could have answered.

Preterpluperfect.

Uvièra, uvièsse respondido, when I had answered.

uvièras, uvièsses respondido, when thou hadst answered.

uvièra, uvièsse respondido, when he had answered.

uvièramos, uvièssèmos respondido, when we had answered.

uvièrades, uvièssèdes respondido, when ye had answered.

uvièran, uvièssen respondido, when they had answered.

Uncertain tense.

Responderia, I would answer.

responderias, thou wouldst answer.

responderia, he would answer.

responderiamos, we would answer.

responderiades, ye would answer.

responderian, they would answer.

First future.

Respondière, I shall answer.

respondières, thou shalt answer.

respondière, he shall answer.

respondièremos, we shall answer.

respondièredes, ye shall answer.

respondièren, they shall answer.

Second future.

Uvière respondido, when I shall have answered.

uvières respondido, when thou shalt have answered.

uvière respondido, when he shall have answered.

uvièremos respondido, when we shall have answered.

uvièredes

uvièredes respondido, when ye shall have answered.
uvièren respondido, when they shall have answered.

Infinitive mood. Present tense.

Respondèr, to answer.

Preterperfect.

Avèr respondido, to have answered.

Future.

Avèr de respondèr, to answer hereafter.

Gerund.

Respondièndo, in answering.

First supine.

A respondèr, to answer.

Second supine.

De ser respondido, to be answered.

Participle of the present.

El que responde, answering.

Participle of the preter.

Respondido, answered.

List of regular verbs terminated in *er*, which are conjugated like *responder*.

Aprèndèr, to learn.

acogèr, to receive and entertain.

acogèr se, to retire.

acomètèr, to attack.

B.

Bevèr, to drink.*barrèr*, to sweep.

C.

Corrèspòndèr, to correspond.*còmer*, to eat, to dine.*còger*, to gather.*concedèr*, to grant.*cometèr*, to set upon.

D.

Devèr, to owe.

E.

Escogèr, to chuse.*emprenèr*, to enterprize.*escozèr*, to smart.

M.

Metèr, to put.

P.

Prometèr, to promise.*pretendèr*, to pretend.

R.

Reprehèndèr, to reprehend.*recogèr*, to withdraw.

T.

Temèr, to fear.

V.

Vendèr, to sell.*vencèr*, to conquer, &c.

Con-

Conjugation of the reciprocal verb *to hide* *one's self*, *esconder se*,
to hide one's self.

Indicative mood. Present tense,

Singular.

Me escondo, I hide myself.

te escondes, thou hidest thyself.

se esconde, he hideth himself.

Plural.

Nos escondemos, we hide ourselves.

os escondéis, ye hide yourselves.

se esconden, they hide themselves.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Me escondia, I did hide myself.

te escondias, thou didst hide thyself.

se escondia, he did hide himself.

Plural.

Nos escondiamos, we did hide ourselves.

os escondiades, ye did hide yourselves.

se escondian, they did hide themselves.

Perfect definite.

Singular.

Me escondi, I hid myself.

te escondiste, thou hidst thyself.

se escondió, he hid himself.

Plural.

Nos escondimos, we hid ourselves.

os escondistes, ye hid yourselves.

se escondieron, they hid themselves.

Perfect

Perfect Indefinite.

Singular.

Me he escondido, I have hid myself.

te as escondido, thou hast hid thyself.

se a escondido, he hath hid himself.

Plural.

Nos bemos escondido, we have hid ourselves.

os aveis escondido, ye have hid yourselves.

se han escondido, they have hid themselves.

Pluperfect.

Me havia escondido, I had hid myself.

te havias escondido, thou hadst hid thyself.

se havia escondido, he had hid himself.

Plural.

Nos baviámos escondido, we had hid ourselves.

os baviades escondido, ye had hid yourselves.

se bavian escondido, they had hid themselves.

First future.

Me esconderè, I shall or will hide myself.

te esconderàs, thou shalt or wilt hide thyself.

se escondera, he shall or will hide himself.

Plural.

Nos esconderèmos, we shall or will hide ourselves.

os esconderèis, ye shall or will hide yourselves.

se esconderàn, they shall or will hide themselves.

Second future.

Me he de esconder, I must hide myself.

te has de esconder, thou must hide thyself.

se a de esconder, he must hide himself.

Plural.

Plural.

Nos bemos de esconder, we must hide ourselves.
os aveis de esconder, ye must hide yourselves.
se han de esconder, they must hide themselves.

Compound tenses.

Singular.

Me avia de esconder.
te avias de esconder.
se avia de esconder.

Plural.

Nos aviamos de esconder.
os aviades de esconder.
se avian de esconder.

Singular.

Me avrè de esconder.
te avràs de esconder.
se avrà de esconder.

Plural.

Nos avremos de esconder.
os avreis de esconder.
se avran de esconder.

Imperative.

Singular.

Escondete, hide thou.
escondase, let him hide.

Plural.

Escondamosnos, hide we.
escondedos, hide ye.
escondase, let them hide.

Optative

Optative and subjunctive. Present tense.

Singular.

*Aunque, si**me esconda*, though, if I may or can hide myself.*te escondas*, though, if thou mayst or canst hide thyself.*se esconda*, though, if he may or can hide himself.

Plural.

Nos escondamos, though, if we may or can hide ourselves.*os escondais*, tho', if ye may or can hide yourselves.*se escondan*, though, if they may or can hide themselves.

Singular.

Me escondiera, I might hide myself.*te escondieras*, thou mightst hide thyself.*se escondiera*, he might hide himself.

Plural.

Nos escondiéramos, we might hide ourselves.*os escondierades*, ye might hide yourselves.*se escondieran*, they might hide themselves.

Idem.

Me escondiessa, I might hide myself.*te escondiesses*, thou mightst hide thyself.*se escondiessa*, he might hide himself.

Plural.

Nos escondiéssamos, we might hide ourselves.*os escondiessedes*, ye might hide yourselves.*se escondiessen*, they might hide themselves.

Perfect.

Perfect.

Singular.

Me aya escondido, I could, might have hid, when I have hid myself.

te aya escondido, thou couldst, mightst have hid, when thou hadst hid thyself.

se aya escondido he could, might have hid, when he had hid himself.

Plural.

Nos ayamos escondido, we could, might have hid, when we had hid ourselves.

os ayais escondido, ye could, might have hid, when ye had hid yourselves.

se ayan escondido, they could, might have hid, when they have hid themselves.

Pluperfect.

Singular.

Quando

Me uviera escondido, when I had hid myself.

te uvieras escondido, when thou hadst hid thyself.

se uviera escondido, when he had hid himself.

Plural.

Nos uvieramos escondido, when we had hid ourselves.

os uvierades escondido, when ye had hid yourselves.

se uvieran escondido, when they had hid themselves.

Idem.

Singular.

Me uviesse escondido, when I had hid myself.

te uviesse escondido, when thou hadst hid thyself.

se uviesse escondido, when he had hid himself.

Plural.

Plural.

Quando

Nos uviéssomos escondido, we had hid ourselves.
os uviéssedes escondido, when ye had hid yourselves.
se uviéssen escondido, when they had hid themselves.

Uncertain.

Singular.

Me esconderia, I should hide myself.
te esconderias, thou shouldst hide thyself.
se esconderia, he should hide himself.

Plural.

Nos esconderiamos, we should hide ourselves.
os esconderiades, ye should hide yourselves.
se esconderian, they should hide themselves.

Future.

Singular.

Me escondiere, when I shall or will hide myself.
te escondieres, when thou shalt or wilt hide thyself.
se escondiere, when he shall or will hide himself.

Plural.

Nos escondiéremos, when we shall or will hide ourselves.
os escondieredes, when ye shall or will hide yourselves.
se escondièren, they shall or will hide themselves.

Infinitive.

Esconderse, to hide one's self.

Preterit.

Aver se de esconder, to have hid one's self.

Gerund.

Gerund.

Escondiéndose se, hiding himself.

Participle.

Escondido, hid.

Conjugation of the irregular verb in er, absolver, to absolve.

This verb is irregular in the three persons singular, and the third plural of the present tense indicative mood; in the second and third singular, and the third plural, of the imperative; in the three persons singular and third plural of the optative and subjunctive moods.

Indicative mood. Present tense.

Absuélve, I absolve.

absuélves, thou absolvest.

absuélve, he absolveth.

absolvèmos, we absolve.

absolvèis, ye absolve.

absuélven, they absolve.

Preterimperfect.

Absolvía, I did absolve.

absolvías, thou didst absolve.

absolvía, he did absolve.

absolviàmos, we did absolve.

absolviàdes, ye did absolve.

absolvían, they did absolve.

Pre-

Preterperfect definite.

Absolvì, I absolve.
absolviste, thou absolveſt.
absolviò, he absolved.
absolvimos, we absolved.
absolvistes, ye absolved.
absolvieron, they absolved.

Preterperfect indefinite.

He, *uve* *absuèlto*, I have absolved.
às, *uviste* *absuèlto*, thou haſt absolved.
à, *uvo* *absuèlto*, he hath absolved.
bèmos, *uvimos* *absuèlto*, we have absolved.
avèis, *uvistes* *absuèlto*, ye have absolved.
an, *uvièron* *absuèlto*, they have absolved.

Preterpluperfect.

Avia *absuèlto*, I had absolved.
avias *absuèlto*, thou hadſt absolved.
avia *absuèlto*, he had absolved.
aviamos *absuèlto*, we had absolved.
aviades *absuèlto*, ye had absolved.
avian *absuèlto*, they had absolved.

First future.

Absolverè, I ſhall or will absolve.
absolveràs, thou ſhalt or wilt absolve.
absolverà, he ſhall or will absolve.
absolverèmos, we ſhall or will absolve.
absolverèis, ye ſhall or will absolve.
absolveràn, they ſhall or will absolve.

Second future.

He or tengo de absolver, I must absolve.
as de absolver, thou must absolve.

Compound tenses.

Avia de absolver, &c.
avore de absolver, &c.

Imperative mood.

absuélve te, absolve thou.
absuélva el, let him absolve.
absolvámos nosotros, let us absolve.
absolved vosotros, absolve ye.
absuélvan ellos or aquellos, let them absolve.

Optative and subjunctive.

Present tense.

Absuélva, I may or can, when I do absolve.
absuélvas, thou mayst or canst, when thou dost absolve.
absuélva, he may or can, when he does absolve.
absolvámos, we may or can, when we do absolve.
absolváis, ye may or can, when ye do absolve.
absuélvan, they may or can, when they do absolve.

Preterimperfect.

Si absolvièra, absolvièsse, when I did absolve, though I could or might absolve.
si absolvièras, absolvièsses, when thou didst absolve, &c.
si absolvièra, absolvièsse, when he did absolve, &c.
si absolvièramos, absolvièssèmos, when we did absolve, &c.
si absolvièrades, absolvièssèdes, when ye did absolve, &c.
si absolvièran, absolvièssen, when they did absolve, &c.

Si

Preterperfect.

àya absuèlto, when I have, though I have absolved.
àyas absuèlto, when thou hast, tho' thou hast absolved.
àya absuèlto, when he has, though he has absolved.
ayàmos absuèlto, when we have, tho' we have absolved.
ayàis absuèlto, when ye have, tho' ye have absolved.
àyan absuèlto, when they have, tho' they have absolved.

Preterpluperfect.

Uvièra, or *uvièsse absuèlto*, when I had, though I had absolved.
uvièras, *uvièsses absuèlto*, when thou hadst, though thou hadst absolved.
uvièra, *uvièsse absuèlto*, when he had, though he had absolved.
uvièramos, *uvièssèmos absuèlto*, when we had, though we had absolved.
uvièrades, *uvièssèdes absuèlto*, when ye had, though ye had absolved.
uvièran, *uvièssen absuèlto*, when they had, though they had absolved.

Uncertain tense.

Absolveria, I did or would absolve.
absolverias, thou didst or wouldst absolve.
absolveria, he did or would absolve.
absolveriamos, we did or would absolve.
absolveriades, ye did or would absolve.
absolverian, they did or would absolve.

First future.

Absolvière, when I shall or will absolve.
absolvières, when thou shalt or wilt absolve.

absolvière,

absolviere, when he shall or will absolve.

absolvieremos, when we shall or will absolve.

absolvièredes, when ye shall or will absolve.

absolvièren, when they shall or will absolve.

Second future.

Uvière absuelto, when I shall have absolved.

uvières absuelto, when thou shalt have absolved.

uvière absuelto, when he shall have absolved.

uvièremos absuelto, when we shall have absolved.

uvièredes absuelto, when ye shall have absolved.

uvièren absuelto, when they shall have absolved.

Infinitive mood. Present tense.

Absolvèr, to absolve.

Preterperfect.

Avèr absuelto, to have absolved.

Future.

Avèr de absolvèr, to absolve hereafter.

Gerund.

Absolvièndo, in absolving.

First supine.

A absolvèr, to absolve.

Second supine.

De ser absuelto, to be absolved.

Participle of the present.

El que absuèlve, absolving.

Participle of the preter.

Absuelto, absolved.

A list of irregular verbs in *er*, conjugated like *absolver*.

Bolvèr, buélvo, to turn, to return, I turn, I return.

Cozèr, yo cuèzo, to boil, I boil.

Holèr, buèlo, to smell, I smell.

Molèr, muèlo, to grind, I grind.

Mordèr, muèrdo, to bite, to gnaw, I gnaw.

Movèr, muèvo, to move, I move.

Resolvèr, resuélvo, to resolve, to untie, I resolve.

Solèr, suèlo, to be accustomed, I am accustomed.

Torcèr, tuèrço, to wrest, I wrest.

All which verbs are conjugated like *absolver*: *cozèr, bolèr, mordèr, moler, mover, soler, torcer*, make the participle of the preter tense in *ido*, as *cozido, bolido, &c.* But *bolvèr, resolvèr*, and their derivatives, make this participle in *uelto*, as *bolvèr, buèlto; embolvèr, embuèlto; resolvèr, resuèlto; absolver, absuèlto*; in all besides they follow the verb, which I have given for an example. As the irregular verbs in *er* differ in almost every tense irregular, having different terminations, as may be remarked in their conjugating, I shall, for the ease and improvement of the learner, conjugate the most difficult of these irregulars.

Conjugation of the verb *querer*.

Remark that this verb has two significations, one *to will or desire*, the other *to love*.

N. B. It is not irregular in the preterperfect, preterpluperfect, and second future.

This

This verb is irregular in the three persons singular, and the third plural of the present tense, indicative mood; in the second and third singular, and the third person plural of the imperative; and throughout the optative and subjunctive, except in the uncertain tense, which is the termination *ria*.

Indicative mood. Present tense.

Quièro, I will or desire, I love or esteem.
quières, thou wilt or desirest, lovest or esteamest.
quière, he willeth or desireth, loveth or esteemeth,
querèmos, we will or desire, love or esteem.
querèis, ye will or desire, love or esteem.
quièren, they will or desire, love or esteem.

Preterimperfect.

Querìa, I did esteem, I did desire.
querìas, thou didst esteem, or desire.
querìa, he did esteem, or desire.
querìamos, we did esteem, or desire.
querìades, ye did esteem, or desire.
querìan, they did esteem, or desire.

Preterperfect definite.

Quise, I esteemed, desired.
quisiste, thou esteemedst, desiredst.
quiso, he esteemed, desired.
quisimos, we esteemed, desired.
quisistes, ye esteemed, desired.
quisieron, they esteemed, desired.

Preterperfect indefinite.

He querido, I have esteemed, desired.
has querido, thou hast esteemed, desired.

118 The Spanish Grammar.

a querido, he hath esteemed, desired.
bemos or *avemos querido*, we have esteemed, desired.
aveis querido, ye have esteemed, desired.
an querido, they have esteemed, desired.

The preterpluperfect.

Avia querido, I had esteemed, desired.
avias querido, thou hadst esteemed, desired.
avia querido, he had esteemed, desired.
aviamos querido, we had esteemed, desired.
aviades querido, ye had esteemed, desired.
avian querido, they had esteemed, desired.

Future.

Querrè, I shall or will love, desire.
querràs, thou shalt or wilt love, desire.
querrà, he shall or will love, desire.
querrèmos, we shall or will love, desire.
querrèis, ye shall or will love, desire.
querràn, they shall or will love, desire.

The imperative mood.

Quière tu, love thou.
quiera el or *aquel*, let him love.
queràmos nosotros, let us love.
querèd vosotros, love ye.
quieran ellos or *aquéllos*, let them love.

Optative and subjunctive.

Quièra, I may or can, when, tho' I do, esteem, desire.
quieras, thou mayst or canst, &c.
quiera, he may or can, &c.
queràmos, we may or can, &c.
queràis, ye may or can, &c.
quieran, they may or can, &c.

Imperfect.

Quisiera, quisièsse, I might, would, could, though,
when I did esteem, desire.

quisieras, quisièsses, thou mightst, wouldst, couldst,
though, when thou didst esteem, desire.

quisiera, quisièsse, he might, would, could, though,
when he did esteem, desire.

quisiéramos, quisièssemos, we might, would, could,
though, when we did esteem, desire.

quisiérades, quisièssedes, ye might, would, could, tho',
when ye did esteem, desire.

quisieran, quisièssen, they might, would, could, though,
when they did esteem, desire.

Preterperfect.

Aunque, como, quando, though, as, when.

aya querido, I have esteemed or loved.

ayas querido, thou hast esteemed or loved.

aya querido, he hath esteemed or loved.

ayamos querido, we have esteemed or loved.

ayais querido, ye have esteemed or loved.

ayan querido, they have esteemed or loved.

Preterpluperfect.

Quando

Uvièra, uvièsse querido, when I had loved.

uvièras, uvièsses querido, when thou hadst loved.

uvièra, uvièsse querido, when he had loved.

uvièramos, uvièssemos querido, when we had loved.

uvièrades, uvièssedes querido, when ye had loved.

uvièran, uvièssen querido, when they had loved.

118 *The Spanish Grammar.*

a querido, he hath esteemed, desired.
bemos or *avemos querido*, we have esteemed, desired.
aveis querido, ye have esteemed, desired.
an querido, they have esteemed, desired.

The preterpluperfect.

Avia querido, I had esteemed, desired.
avias querido, thou hadst esteemed, desired.
avia querido, he had esteemed, desired.
aviamos querido, we had esteemed, desired.
aviades querido, ye had esteemed, desired.
avian querido, they had esteemed, desired.

Future.

Querrè, I shall or will love, desire.
querràs, thou shalt or wilt love, desire.
querrà, he shall or will love, desire.
querrèmos, we shall or will love, desire.
querrèis, ye shall or will love, desire.
querràn, they shall or will love, desire.

The imperative mood.

Quière tu, love thou.
quiera el or *aquel*, let him love.
queràmos nosotros, let us love.
querèd vosotros, love ye.
quieran ellos or *aquéllos*, let them love.

Optative and subjunctive.

Quièra, I may or can, when, tho' I do, esteem, desire.
quièras, thou mayst or canst, &c.
quièra, hé may or can, &c.
queràmos, we may or can, &c.
queràis, ye may or can, &c.
quieran, they may or can, &c.

Imperfect.

Quisiera, quisièsse, I might, would, could, though,
when I did esteem, desire.

quisieras, quisièsses, thou mightst, wouldst, couldst,
though, when thou didst esteem, desire.

quisiera, quisièsse, he might, would, could, though,
when he did esteem, desire.

quisiéramos, quisièssemos, we might, would, could,
though, when we did esteem, desire.

quisièrades, quisièssedes, ye might, would, could, tho',
when ye did esteem, desire.

quisièran, quisièssen, they might, would, could, though,
when they did esteem, desire.

Preterperfect.

Aunque, como, quando, though, as, when.

àya querido, I have esteemed or loved.

àyas querido, thou hast esteemed or loved.

àya querido, he hath esteemed or loved.

ayamos querido, we have esteemed or loved.

ayais querido, ye have esteemed or loved.

ayan querido, they have esteemed or loved.

Preterpluperfect.

Quando

Uvièra, uvièsse querido, when I had loved.

uvièras, uvièsses querido, when thou hadst loved.

uvièra, uvièsse querido, when he had loved.

uvièramos, uvièssemos querido, when we had loved.

uvièrades, uvièssedes querido, when ye had loved.

uvièran, uvièssen querido, when they had loved.

Uncertain tense.

Querria, I would love or esteem.*querrias*, thou wouldst love or esteem.*querria*, he would love or esteem.*querriamos*, we would love or esteem.*querriades*, ye would love or esteem.*querrian*, they would love or esteem.

First future.

*Quando**Quisiere*, when I shall or will love, esteem, desire.*quisieres*, when thou shalt or wilt love, esteem, desire.*quisiere*, when he shall or will love, esteem, desire.*quisieremos*, when we shall or will love, esteem, desire.*quisieredes*, when ye shall or will love, esteem, desire.*quisieren*, when they shall or will love, esteem, desire.

Second future.

Uviere querido, when I shall have esteemed or loved.*uvières querido*, when thou shalt have esteemed or loved.*uviere querido*, when he shall have esteemed or loved.*uvièremos querido*, when we shall have esteemed or loved.*uvièredes querido*, when ye shall have esteemed or loved.*uvièren querido*, when they shall have esteemed or loved.

Infinitive mood. Present tense.

Querèr, to desire, esteem.

Preterperfect.

Avèr querido, to have desired.

Future.

Avèr de querèr, to desire hereafter.

Gerund.

Queriendo, in desiring, in loving.

Participle.

Querido, desired, esteemed.

Conjugation of the verb caer, to fall.

This verb is irregular in the first person singular number, present tense, indicative mood; in the third singular, in the first and third plural number, of the imperative mood; and in all three persons, both singular and plural, in the optative and subjunctive moods.

Indicative mood. Present tense.

Singular.

Cayo, I fall.

caès, thou fallest.

caè, he falleth.

Plural.

caèmos, we fall.

caèis, ye fall.

caèn, they fall.

Preterimperfect.

Singular.

Caía, I did fall.

caías, thou didst fall.

caía, he did fall.

Plural.

caíamos, we did fall.

caíades, ye did fall.

caían, they did fall.

Preterperfect definite.

Singular.

Caí, I fell.

caíste, thou fellest.

cayò, he fell.

Plural.

caímos, we fell.

caístes, ye fell.

cayeron, they fell.

Pre-

Preterperfect indefinite.

He, ùve caído, I have fallen.
as, uviste caído, thou hast fallen.
a, ùvo caído, he has fallen.
avèmos, uvimos caído, we have fallen.
aveys, ùvistes caído, ye have fallen.
àn, uvièron caído, they have fallen.

Preterpluperfect.

Avia caído, I had fallen.
avias caído, thou hadst fallen.
avia caído, he had fallen.
aviamos caído, we had fallen.
aviades caído, ye had fallen.
avian caído, they had fallen.

Future.

Singular.

Caerè, I shall or will fall.
caeràs, thou shalt or wilt fall.
caerà, he shall or will fall.

Plural.

Caerèmos, we shall or will fall.
caerèis, ye shall or will fall.
caeràn, they shall or will fall.

Second future.

He or tengo de caer, I must fall.
às de caer, thou must fall.
à de caer, he must fall.
avèmos de caer, we must fall.
avèis de caer, ye must fall.
àn de caer, they must fall.

Imperative.

Cae tu, fall thou.

caiga el, let him fall.

caigamos nosotros, fall we, or let us fall.

caed vosotros, fall ye.

caigan ellos, fall they, or let them fall.

Optative and Subjunctive. Present tense.

Como, aunque, oxala, &c. as, though, &c.

Singular.

Caiga, I may or can fall.

caigas, thou mayst or canst fall.

caiga, he may or can fall.

Plural.

Caigamos, we may or can fall.

caigais, ye may or can fall.

caigan, they may or can fall.

Preterimperfect.

Caièra, caièsse, I did, I might, I could fall.

caièras, caièsses, thou didst, thou mightst, thou couldst fall.

caièra, caièsse, he did, he might, he could fall.

caièramos, caièssèmos, we did, we might, we could fall.

caièrades, caièssèdes, ye did, ye might, ye could fall.

caièran, caièssen, they did, they might, they could fall.

Preterperfect.

Singular.

Aya càido, when I have fallen.

àyas càido, when thou hast fallen.

àya càido, when he has fallen.

Plural.

124 The Spanish Grammar.

Plural.

Ayàmos càido, when we have fallen.

ayàis càido, when ye have fallen.

àyan càido, when they have fallen.

Preterpluperfect.

Quando

Uviera, uvièsse càido, when, though I had fallen.

uvièras, uvièsses càido, when, though thou hadst fallen.

uvièra, uvièsse càido, when, though he had fallen.

uvièramos, uvièssèmos càido, when, though we had fallen.

uvièrades, uvièssèdes càido, when, though ye had fallen.

uvièran, uvièssen càido, when, though they had fallen.

Uncertain tense.

Singular.

Caeria, I would fall.

caerías, thou wouldst fall.

caeria, he would fall.

Plural.

caeríamos, we would fall.

caeríades, ye would fall.

caerían, they would fall.

First future.

Singular.

Cayere, when I shall fall.

cayères, when thou shalt fall.

cayèrè, when he shall fall.

Plural.

Cayèremos, when we shall fall.

cayèredes, when ye shall fall.

cayèren, when they shall fall.

Second

Second future.

Uvière càido, when I shall have fallen.

uvières càido, when thou shalt have fallen.

uvière càido, when he shall have fallen.

uvièremos càido, when we shall have fallen.

uvièredes càido, when ye shall have fallen.

uvièren càido, when they shall have fallen.

Infinitive mood. Present tense.

Caèr, to fall.

Preterperfect.

Aver càido, to have fallen.

Future.

Avèr de caèr, to fall hereafter.

Gerund.

Cayèndo, in falling.

Participle of the present.

El que càe, falling.

Participle of the preter.

Caydo, fallen.

Participle of the future.

El que ha de caèr, about to fall.

The conjugation of the verb *bazèr*,

Which is irregular in the first person singular of the indicative; in the third singular, and first and third

third plural, of the imperative; and throughout the optative and subjunctive, except in the tenses compounded with auxiliary verbs.

Indicative mood. Present tense.

Singular.

To hago, I do or make.

hazes, thou dost or makest.

haze, he does or makes.

Plural.

Hazemos, we do or make.

hazéis, ye do or make.

hazen, they do or make.

Preterimperfect.

Singular.

Hazía, I did do or make.

hazías, thou didst do or make.

hazía, he did do or make.

Plural.

Hazíamos, we did do or make.

hazíades, ye did do or make.

hazían, they did do or make.

Preterperfect definite.

Singular.

Hize, I did or made.

biziste, thou didst or madest.

bizo, he did or made.

Plural.

Hizimos, we did or made.

bizistes, ye did or made.

bizieron, they did or made.

Preter-

Preterperfect indefinite.

Hè, úve becho, I have done or made.
às, uviste becho, thou hast done or made.
à, úvo becho, he has done or made.
bemos, uvimos becho, we have done or made.
avéis, uvistes becho, ye have done or made.
àn, uvieron becho, they have done or made.

The preterpluperfect.

Avia becho, I had done or made.
avias becho, thou hadst done or made.
avia becho, he had done or made.
aviamos becho, we had done or made.
aviades becho, ye had done or made.
avian becho, they had done or made.

Future.

Harè, I shall or will make or do.
haràs, thou shalt or wilt make or do.
harà, he shall or will make or do.
haremos, we shall or will make or do.
hareis, ye shall or will make or do.
haràn, they shall or will make or do.

Second future.

He de hazèr.

Compound.

Avia de hazèr.
Avrè de hazèr.

The imperative mood.

Hàz tu, do thou, make thou.
hàga aquel, let him do or make.

hagàmas,

bagamos, let us do or make.

bazèd, do or make ye.

bàgan, let them do or make.

Optative and subjunctive. Present tense.

Hàga, when I make, I can, may do.

bàgas, thou mayst make or do.

bàga, he may make or do.

bàgamos, we may make or do.

bàgais, ye may make or do.

bàgan, they may make or do.

Preterimperfect.

Hizièra, *bizièsse*, when I did make, I might, could do, make.

bizièras, *bizièsses*, when thou didst, mightst, shouldst make or do.

bizièra, *bizièsse*, when he did, might, should make or do.

bizièramos, *bizièssemos*, when we did, might, should make or do.

bizièrades, *bizièssedes*, when ye did, might, should make or do.

bizièran, *bizièssen*, when they did, might, should make or do.

Preterperfect.

Aya bècho, when I have made or done.

ayàs bècho, when thou hast made or done.

àya bècho, when he has made or done.

ayàmos bècho, when we have made or done.

ayàis bècho, when ye have made or done.

àyan bècho, when they have made or done.

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

Uvièra, uvièsse bècho, when I had made or done.

uvièras, uvièsses bècho, when thou hadst made or done.

uvièra, uvièsse bècho, when he had made or done.

uvièramos, uvièssèmos bècho, when we had made or done.

uvièrades, uvièssedes bècho, when ye had made or done.

uvièran, uvièssen bècho, when they had made or done.

Uncertain tense.

Harìa, I would do or make.

barìas, thou wouldst do or make.

barìa, he would do or make.

barìamos, we would do or make.

barìades, ye would do or make.

barìan, they would do or make.

First future.

Quando

Hizièrè, when I shall or will do or make.

bizièrès, when thou shalt or wilt do or make.

bizièrè, when he shall or will do or make.

bizièrèmos, when we shall or will do or make.

bizièredes, when ye shall or will do or make.

bizièrèn, when they shall or will do or make.

Second future.

Uvièrè bècho, when I shall have made or done.

uvièrès bècho, when thou shalt have made or done.

uvièrè bècho, when he shall have made or done.

uvièrèmos bècho, when we shall have made or done.

K

uvièredes

130 The Spanish Grammar.

uvièredes bècho, when ye shall have made or done.

uvièren bècho, when they shall have made or done.

Infinitive mood. Present tense.

Hazèr, to do or make.

Preterperfect.

Avèr bècho, to have made or done.

Future.

Avèr ò esperàr de hazèr, to do hereafter.

Gerund.

Hazièndo, in doing, in making.

First supine.

A hazèr, to make or to do.

Second supine.

De ser bècho, to be made or done.

Participle of the present.

El que haze, doing, making.

Participle of the preter.

Hècho, done or made.

Participle of the future.

El que ha ò espèra de hazèr, about to do or make.

Conjugation

Conjugation of the auxiliary verb *tener*, to have or to hold.

Indicative mood. Present tense.

Singular.

Tengo, I hold or do hold.

tienes, thou holdest or dost hold.

tiene, he holds or doth hold.

Plural.

Tenemos, we hold or do hold.

teneis, ye hold or do hold.

tienen, they hold or do hold.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Tenia, I did hold.

tenias, thou didst hold.

tenia, he did hold.

Plural.

teniamos, we did hold.

teniades, ye did hold.

tenian, they did hold.

Preterperfect definite.

Singular.

Tuve, I held.

tuviste, thou heldst.

tuvo, he held.

Plural.

tuvimos, we held.

tuvistes, ye held.

tuvieron, they held.

Preterperfect indefinite.

Singular.

He tenido, I have held.

as tenido, thou hast held.

ha tenido, he hath held.

132 The Spanish Grammar.

Plural.

Avemos tenido, we have held.

aveis tenido, ye have held.

an tenido, they have held.

Preterpluperfect.

Singular.

Avia tenido, I had held.

avias tenido, thou hadst held.

avia tenido, he had held.

Plural.

Havíamos tenido, we had held.

baviades tenido, ye had held.

bavian tenido, they had held.

First future.

Singular.

Tendrè, ternè, I will hold.

tendràs, ternàs, thou wilt hold.

tendrâ, ternâ, he will hold.

Plural.

Tendremos, ternemos, we will hold.

tendreis, ternéis, ye will hold.

tendrán, ternán, they will hold.

Second future.

Singular.

He de tener, I shall hold.

as de tener, thou shalt hold.

a de tener, he shall hold.

Plural.

Avèmos de tener, we shall hold.

aveis de tener, ye shall hold.

han de tener, they shall hold.

Compound tenses.

Singular.

Avià de tener, I ought to have held.

avias de tener, thou oughtst to have held.

avia de tener, he ought to have held.

Plural.

Aviàmos de tener, we ought to have held.

aviades de tener, ye ought to have held.

avian de tener, they ought to have held.

Singular.

Avrè de tener, I am obliged to hold.

avrà de tener, thou art obliged to hold.

avràs de tener, he is obliged to hold.

Plural.

Avrèmos de tener, we are obliged to hold.

avreis de tener, ye are obliged to hold.

avràn de tener, they are obliged to hold.

Imperative.

Singular.

Ten tu, hold thou.

tenga el, let him hold.

Plural.

Tengamos, hold we.

tened, hold ye.

tengan, let them hold.

Optative and subjunctive.

Singular.

Tenga, I may or can hold.

tengas, thou mayst or canst hold.

tenga, he may or can hold.

Plural.

134 The Spanish Grammar.

Plural.

Tengàmos, we may or can hold.

tengàis, ye may or can hold.

tèngan, they may or can hold.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Tuviera, I might or could hold.

tuvieras, thou mightst or couldst hold.

tuviera, he might or could hold.

Plural.

Tuvièramos, we might or could hold.

tuvièrades, ye might or could hold.

tuvièran, they might or could hold.

Idem.

Singular.

Tuvièsse, I should or would hold.

tuvièsses, thou shouldst or wouldst hold.

tuvièsse, he should or would hold.

Plural.

Tuvièssèmos, we should or would hold.

tuvièssèdes, ye should or would hold.

tuvièssen, they should or would hold.

Perfect.

Singular.

Aya tenido, I may have held.

ayas tenido, thou mayst have held.

aya tenido, he may have held.

Plural.

Ayàmos tenido, we may have held.

ayais tenido, ye may have held.

ayan tenido, they may have held.

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

Singular.

Uvièra tenido, I might have held.

uvièras tenido, thou mightst have held.

-uvièra tenido, he might have held.

Plural.

Uvièramos tenido, we might have held.

uvièrades tenido, ye might have held.

uvièran tenido, they might have held.

Idem.

Singular.

Uvièsse tenido, I might have held.

uvièsses tenido, thou mightst have held.

uvièsse tenido, he might have held.

Plural.

Uvièssemos tenido, we might have held.

uvièssedes tenido, ye might have held.

uvièssen tenido, they might have held.

Uncertain tense.

Singular.

Tendria; ternia, I would hold.

tendrias; ternias, thou wouldst hold.

tendria; ternia, he would hold.

Plural.

Tendriamos; terniamos, we would hold.

tendriades; terniades, ye would hold.

tendrian; ternian, they would hold.

Idem.

Singular.

Plural.

Ternia, I would hold.*terniamos*, we would hold.*ternias*, thou wouldst hold.*terniades*, ye would hold.*ternia*, he would hold.*ternian*, they would hold.

First future.

Singular.

Tuviere, I shall have held.*tuvières*, thou shalt have held.*tuviere*, he shall have held.

Plural.

Tuviéremos, we shall have held.*tuviéredes*, ye shall have held.*tuvièren*, they shall have held.

Second future.

Singular.

Uviere tenido, when I shall have held.*uvières tenido*, when thou shalt have held.*uviere tenido*, when he shall have held.

Plural

Uviéremos tenido, when we shall have held.*uviéredes tenido*, when ye shall have held.*uvièren tenido*, when they shall have held.

Infinitive.

Tèner, to have or to hold.*aver tenido*, to have held.*aver de tener*, to hold hereafter.*teniendo*, holding.

First supine.

A tener, to hold.

Second supine.

De ser tenido, to be held.

Participle present.

Tenido, holding.

Indicative mood. Present tense.

Yo sé, I know.

sabemos, we know.

sabes, thou knowest.

sabéis, ye know.

sabe, he knows.

saben, they know.

Preterimperfect.

Sabía, I did know.

sabíamos, we did know.

sabías, thou didst know.

sabíades, ye did know.

sabía, he did know.

sabían, they did know.

Preterperfect definite.

Supe, I knew.

supimos, we knew.

supiste, thou knewest.

supistes, ye knew.

supo, he knew.

supieron, they knew.

Preterperfect indefinite.

He, *uve sabido*, I have known.

as, *uviste sabido*, thou hast known.

à, *uvo sabido*, he hath known.

avemos, *uvimos sabido*, we have known.

avéis, *uvistes sabido*, ye have known.

àn, *uvièron sabido*, they have known.

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

Avia sabido, I had known.
avias sabido, thou hadst known.
avia sabido, he had known.
aviamos sabido, we had known.
aviades sabido, ye had known.
avian sabido, they had known.

The future.

Sabrè, I shall or will know.
sabràs, thou shalt or wilt know.
sabrà, he shall or will know.
sabremos, we shall or will know.
sabrèis, ye shall or will know.
sabràn, they shall or will know.

Imperative mood.

Sàbe tu, know thou.
sepá aquel, let him know.
sepamos nosotros, let us know.
sabèd vosotros, know ye.
sepan ellos, let them know.

Subjunctive and optative. Present tense.

Sèpa, when I do or may know.
sepas, when thou dost or mayst know.
sepá, when he doth or may know.
sepamos, when we do or may know.
sepàis, when ye do or may know.
sepan, when they do or may know.

Preterimperfect.

Supièra, *supièsse*, when, though I did, I could, might or would know.

supièras,

supièras, supièsses, when, though thou didst, thou couldst, mightst or wouldst know.

supièra, supièsse, when, though he did, he could, might or would know.

supièramos, supièssemos, when, though we did, we could, might or would know.

supièrades, supièssedes, when, though ye did, ye could, might or would know.

supièran, supièssen, when, though they did, they could, might or would know.

Preterperfect.

Quando

àya sabido, when I have known.

àyas sabido, when thou hast known.

àya sabido, when he hath known.

ayàmos sabido, when we have known.

ayàis sabido, when ye have known.

àyan sabido, when they have known.

Preterpluperfect.

Uvièra, uvièsse sabido, when I had known.

uvièras, uvièsses sabido, when thou hadst known.

uvièra, uvièsse sabido, when he had known.

uvièramos, uvièssemos sabido, when we had known.

uvièrades, uvièssedes sabido, when ye had known.

uvièran, uvièssen sabido, when they had known.

Uncertain tense.

Sabrìa, I would know.

sabrìas, thou wouldst know.

sabrìa, he would know.

sabrìamos, we would know.

sabrìades, ye would know.

sabrìan, they would know.

First future.

*Quando**Supiere*, when I shall or will know.*supières*, when thou shalt or wilt know.*supiere*, when he shall or will know.*supièremos*, when we shall or will know.*supièredes*, when ye shall or will know.*supièren*, when they shall or will know.

Second future.

Uvière sabido, when I shall have known.*uvières sabido*, when thou shalt have known.*uvière sabido*, when he shall have known.*uvièremos sabido*, when we shall have known.*uvièredes sabido*, when ye shall have known.*uvièren sabido*, when they shall have known.

Infinitive. Present tense.

Sabèr, to know.

Preterperfect.

Auèr sabido, to have known.

Future.

Auèr de sabèr, to know hereafter.

Gerund.

Sabièndo, in knowing.

Participle of the present.

El que sabe, knowing.

Participle of the preter.

Sabido, known.

Participle

Participle of the future.

El que ha à espèra de sabèr, to know hereafter.

Conjugation of the verb *ver*, to see.

Indicative mood. — Present tense.

Veo, I see. *vemos*, we see.

vès, thou seest. *vèis*, ye see.

vèe, he seeth. *vèen*, they see.

Preterimperfect.

Via, I did see. *viamos*, we did see.

vias, thou didst see. *viades*, ye did see.

via, he did see. *vian*, they did see.

Preterperfect definite.

Vi, I saw. *vimos*, we saw.

viste, thou sawest. *vistes*, ye saw.

viò, he saw. *vièron*, they saw.

Preterperfect indefinite.

Hè visto, I have seen. *bèmos visto*, we have seen.

às visto, thou hast seen. *avèis visto*, ye have seen.

à visto, he hath seen. *àn visto*, they have seen.

Preterpluperfect.

Avia visto, I had seen.

avias visto, thou hadst seen.

avia visto, he had seen.

aviamos visto, we had seen.

aviades visto, ye had seen.

avian visto, they had seen.

Future.

Future.

Verè, I shall or will see.

veràs, thou shalt or wilt see.

verà, he shall or will see.

verèmos, we shall or will see.

verèis, ye shall or will see.

veràn, they shall or will see.

Second future.

He ò tengo de ver, I must see.

às de ver, thou must see.

à de ver, he must see.

bèmos de ver, we must see.

avèis de ver, ye must see.

àn de ver, they must see.

Imperative.

Vè tu, see thou.

vèa aquel, let him see.

veàmos, let us see.

ved, see ye.

vèan, let them see.

Optative and subjunctive. Present tense.

Via, I may, when I do, I can see.

vèas, thou mayst, when thou dost or canst see.

vèa, he may, when he does or can see.

veàmos, we may, when we do or can see.

veàis, ye may, when ye do or can see.

veàn, they may, when they do or can see.

Preterimperfect.

Vièra, *vièsse*, when I did see, I might or could see.

vièras, *vièsses*, when thou didst see, thou mightst or couldst see.

vièra,

vièra, viesse, when he did see, he might or could see.

vièramos, vièssèmas, when we did see, we might or could see.

vièrades, vièssèdes, when ye did see, ye might or could see.

vièran, vièssen, when they did see, they might or could see.

Preterperfect.

Aya visto, when I have seen.

ayàs visto, when thou hast seen.

aya visto, when he hath seen.

ayàmos visto, when we have seen.

ayàis visto, when ye have seen.

ayan visto, when they have seen.

Preterpluperfect.

Uvièra, uvièsse visto, when I had seen.

uvièras, uvièsses visto, when thou hadst seen.

uvièra, uvièsse visto, when he had seen.

uvièramos, uvièssèmos visto, when we had seen.

uvièrades, uvièssèdes visto, when ye had seen.

uvièran, uvièssen visto, when they had seen.

Uncertain.

Veria, I would see. *veriamos*, we would see.

verias, thou wouldst see. *veriaades*, ye would see.

veria, he would see. *verian*, they would see.

First future.

Vièrè, when I shall or will see.

vièrès, when thou shalt or wilt see.

vièrè, when he shall or will see.

vièremos,

viéremos, when we shall or will see.

viéredes, when ye shall or will see.

viéren, when they shall or will see.

Second future.

Uvière visto, when I shall have seen.

uvières visto, when thou shalt or wilt have seen.

uvière visto, when he shall or will have seen.

uviéremos visto, when we shall have seen.

uviéredes visto, when ye shall or will have seen.

uviéren visto, when they shall or will have seen.

Infinitive mood. Present tense.

Vèr, to see.

Preterperfect.

Avèr visto, to have seen.

Future.

Avèr de vèr, to see hereafter.

Gerund.

Viendo, in seeing.

Participle present.

El que vèe, seeing.

Participle preter.

Visto, seen.

Participle future.

El que ha ò espera de vèr, to see hereafter.

Conjugation of the verb *poder*, to be able.

Indicative mood. Present tense.

Puedo, I am able, I can.
puèdes, thou art able or canst.
puède, he is able or can.
podèmos, we are able or can.
podèis, ye are able or can.
puèden, they are able or can.

Imperfect tense.

Podia, I was able. *podiamos*, we were able.
podias, thou wast able. *podiadès*, ye were able.
podia, he was able. *podian*, they were able.

Preterperfect definite.

Pude, I could. *pudimos*, we could.
pudiste, thou couldst. *pudistes*, ye could.
pudo, he could. *pudieron*, they could.

Preterperfect indefinite.

Hè podido, I have been able, I could have been able.
às podido, thou hast been able, &c.
à podido, he has been able, &c.
bemos podido, we have been able, &c.
avèis podido, ye have been able, &c.
àn podido, they have been able, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

Avia podido, I had been able.
avias podido, thou hadst been able.
avia podido, he had been able.

avíamos podido, we had been able.

avíades podido, ye had been able.

avian podido, they had been able.

Future.

Podré, I shall or will be able.

podrás, thou shalt or wilt be able.

podrá, he shall or will be able.

podremos, we shall or will be able.

podréis, ye shall or will be able.

podrán, they shall or will be able.

This verb has no imperative.

Optative and subjunctive. Present.

Pueda, when I can, though I may be able.

puedas, when thou canst, though thou mayst be able.

pueda, when he can, though he may be able.

podamos, when we can, though we may be able.

podáis, when ye can, though ye may be able.

puedan, when they can, though they may be able.

Preterimperfect.

Pudiera, *pudiesse*, when I could or might be able.

pudieras, *pudiesse*, when thou couldst or mightst be able.

pudiera, *pudiesse*, when he could or might be able.

pudiéramos, *pudiessemos*, when we could or might be able.

pudierades, *pudiesseades*, when ye could or might be able.

pudieran, *pudiesssen*, when they could or might be able.

Preterperfect.

Aya podido, when I have been able.

ayas podido, when thou hast been able.

aya podido, when he hath been able.

ayamos podido, when we have been able.

ayais podido, when ye have been able.

ayan podido, when they have been able.

Preterpluperfect.

Uvièra, uvièsse podido, when I had been able.

uvièras, uvièsses podido, when thou hadst been able.

uvièra, uvièsse podido, when he had been able.

uvièramos, uvièssemos podido, when we had been able.

uvièrades, uvièssedes podido, when ye had been able.

uvièran, uvièssen podido, when they had been able.

Uncertain tense.

Podria, when I would be able.

podrias, when thou wouldst be able.

podria, when he would be able.

podriamos, when we would be able.

podriades, when ye would be able.

podrian, when they would be able.

First future.

Pudiere, when I shall or will be able.

pudieres, when thou shalt or wilt be able.

pudiere, when he shall or will be able.

pudièremos, when we shall or will be able.

pudièredes, when ye shall or will be able.

pudièren, when they shall or will be able.

Second future.

Uvière podido, when I shall have been able.

uvières podido, when thou shalt have been able.

uvière podido, when he shall have been able.

uvièremos podido, when we shall have been able.

148 The Spanish Grammar.

uvièredes podido, when ye shall have been able.

uvièren podido, when they shall have been able.

Infinitive mood. Present.

Podèr, to be able.

Præterperfect.

Avèr podido, to have been able.

Gerund.

Pudiendo, in being able.

Præter participle.

Podido, able.

Conjugation of the irregular verb cabèr, which is a verb common, having both active and passive signification, to contain, and to be contained.

Indicative mood. Present.

Quèpo, I contain, or am contained.

càbes, thou dost contain, or art contained.

càbe, he doth contain, or is contained.

cabèmos, we do contain, or are contained.

cabèis, ye do contain, or are contained.

càben, they do contain, or are contained.

Imperfect.

Cabìa, I did contain, or was contained.

cabias, thou didst contain, or wert contained.

cabìa, he did contain, or was contained.

cabiamos, we did contain, or were contained.

cabiaades, ye did contain, or were contained.

cabian, they did contain, or were contained.

Præter-

Preterperfect definite.

Cuèpe, I contained, I have been contained.
cupiste, thou containedst, or hast been contained.
cupo, he contained, or hath been contained.
cupimos, we contained, or have been contained.
cupistes, ye contained, or have been contained.
cupieron, they contained, or have been contained.

Preterperfect indefinite.

Hè cabido, I have contained.
às cabido, thou hast contained.
à cabido, he hath contained.
avèmos cabido, we have contained.
avèis cabido, ye have contained.
àn cabido, they have contained.

Preterpluperfect.

Avia cabido, I had contained, or had been contained.
avias cabido, thou hadst contained, &c.
avia cabido, he had contained, &c.
aviamos cabido, we had contained, &c.
aviades cabido, ye had contained, &c.
avian cabido, they had contained, &c.

First future.

Cabrè, I shall or will contain, or be contained.
cabràs, thou shalt or wilt contain, or be contained.
cabrà, he shall or will contain, or be contained.
cabrèmos, we shall or will contain, or be contained.
cabrèis, ye shall or will contain, or be contained.
cabràn, they shall or will contain, or be contained.

Second future.

He or *tengo de caber*, I must contain.

as or *tienes de caber*, thou must contain.

a or *tiene de caber*, he must contain.

avemos or *tenemos de caber*, we must contain.

aveis or *teneis de caber*, ye must contain.

ân or *tienen de caber*, they must contain.

Imperative.

Cabe tu, do thou contain.

quepa el, let him contain.

quepamos nosotros, let us contain.

cabed vosotros, contain ye.

quepan ellos, let them contain.

Subjunctive and optative. Present.

Quèpa, when I do, or am contained.

quèpas, when thou dost, or art contained.

quèpa, when he doth, or is contained.

quèpamos, when we do, or are contained.

quèpâis, when ye do, or are contained.

quèpan, when they do, or are contained.

Imperfect.

Cupiera, *cupièsse*, when I did or was contained.

cupieras, *cupièsses*, when thou didst or wast contained.

cupiera, *cupèsse*, when he did or was contained.

cupieramos, *cupièssemos*, when we did or were contained.

cupierades, *cupièssedes*, when ye did or were contained.

cupieran, *cupièssen*, when they did or were contained.

Preterperfect.

Aya cabido, when I have, when I have been contained.

âyas cabido, when thou hast, &c.

âya cabido, when he hath, &c.

aya-

ayamos cabido, when we have, &c.

ayais cabido, when ye have, &c.

ayan cabido, when they have, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

Uvièra, uvièsse cabido, when I had, or had been contained.

uvièras, uvièsses cabido, when thou hadst, or hadst been contained.

uvièra, uvièsse cabido, when he had, or had been contained.

uvièramos, uvièssèmas cabido, when we had, or had been contained.

uvièrades, uvièssèdes cabido, when ye had, or had been contained.

uvièran, uvièssen cabido, when they had, or had been contained.

Uncertain tense.

Cabria, when I would contain.

cabrias, when thou wouldst contain.

cabria, when he would contain.

cabriamos, when we would contain.

cabriades, when ye would contain.

cabrian, when they would contain.

Future.

Cupière, when I shall, or shall be contained.

cupières, when thou shalt, or shalt be contained.

cupière, when he shall, or shall be contained.

cupièremos, when we shall, or shall be contained.

cupièredes, when ye shall, or shall be contained.

cupièren, when they shall, or shall be contained.

Infinitive mood. Present.

Cabèr, to contain, or be contained.

Preterperfect.

Aver cabido, to have contained, or been contained.

Gerund.

Cabiendo, in containing.

Participle.

Cabido, contained.

Conjugation of the verb *entender*, to understand.

Indicative mood. Present.

Entiendo, I understand.

entiendes, thou understandest.

entiende, he understandeth.

entendemos, we understand.

entendéis, ye understand.

entienden, they understand.

Preterimperfect.

Entendía, I did understand.

entendías, thou didst understand.

entendía, he did understand.

entendíamos, we did understand.

entendíades, ye did understand.

entendían, they did understand.

Preterperfect definite.

Entendi, I understood.

entendiste, thou understoodst.

entendió, he understood.

entendimos, we understood.

entendistes, ye understood.

entendieron, they understood.

Preter-

Preterperfect indefinite.

Hè, uve entendido, I have understood.
às, uviste entendido, thou hast understood.
à, uvo entendido, he hath understood.
bemos, uvimos entendido, we have understood.
avéis, uvistes entendido, ye have understood.
àn, uviéron entendido, they have understood.

Preterpluperfect.

Avia entendido, I had understood.
avias entendido, thou hadst understood.
avia entendido, he had understood.
avíamos entendido, we had understood.
aviades entendido, ye had understood.
avian entendido, they had understood.

Future.

Entenderè, I shall or will understand.
entenderàs, thou shalt or wilt understand.
entenderà, he shall or will understand.
entenderèmos, we shall or will understand.
entenderèis, ye shall or will understand.
entenderàn, they shall or will understand.

Imperative mood.

Entiènde te, do thou understand.
entiènda aquel, let him understand.
entendâmos, let us understand.
entendèd, understand ye.
entièndan, let them understand.

Optative

Optative and subjunctive.

Quando

Entienda, when I do, may or can understand.

entiendas, when thou dost understand, &c.

entienda, when he doth understand, &c.

entendamos, when we do understand, &c.

entendais, when ye do understand, &c.

entiendan, when they do understand, &c.

Preterimperfect.

Entendièra, *entendièsse*, I might understand.

entendièras, *entendièsses*, thou mightst understand.

entendièra, *entendièsse*, he might understand.

entendièramos, *entendièssemos*, we might understand.

entendièrades, *entendièssedes*, ye might understand.

entendièran, *entendièssen*, they might understand.

Preterperfect.

Quando

Aya entendido, when I have understood.

ayas entendido, when thou hast understood.

aya entendido, when he has understood.

ayamos entendido, when we have understood.

ayais entendido, when ye have understood.

ayan entendido, when they have understood.

Preterpluperfect.

Uvièra, *uvièsse entendido*, I had understood.

uvièras, *uvièsses entendido*, thou hadst understood.

uvièra, *uvièsse entendido*, he had understood.

uvièramos, *uvièssemos entendido*, we had understood.

uvièrades, *uvièssedes entendido*, ye had understood.

uvièran, *uvièssen entendido*, they had understood.

Future.

Future.

Entendière, I shall or will understand.
entendieres, thou shalt or wilt understand.
entendière, he shall or will understand.
entendieremos, we shall or will understand.
entendieredes, ye shall or will understand.
entendieren, they shall or will understand.

Second future.

Quando

Uvière entendido, when I shall have understood.
uvières entendido, when thou shalt have understood.
uvière entendido, when he shall have understood.
uvièremos entendido, when we shall have understood.
uvièredes entendido, when ye shall have understood.
uvièren entendido, when they shall have understood.

Uncertain tense.

Entenderia, I should understand.
entenderias, thou shouldst understand.
entenderia, he should understand.
entenderiamos, we should understand.
entenderiades, ye should understand.
entenderian, they should understand.

Infinitive mood. Present tense.

Entendèr, to understand.

Preter.

Avèr entendido, to have understood.

Future.

Avèr ò esperar de entendèr, to understand hereafter.

Gerund.

Gerund.

Entendiendo, in understanding.

First supine.

A entender, to understand.

Second supine.

De ser entendido, to be understood.

Participle present.

El que entiende, understanding.

Participle preter.

Entendido, understood.

A list of verbs terminated in *er*, which are conjugated like *entender*.

Atender, *yo atiendo*, to attend, to solicit, I attend.*Concerner*, *yo concierno*, to concern, I concern.*Contender*, *yo contiendo*, to contend, I contend.*Defender*, *yo defiendo*, to defend, I defend.*Encender*, *yo enciendo*, to kindle, I kindle.*Hender*, *yo hiendo*, to cleave, or rive afunder, I cleave, or rive afunder.Conjugation of the verb *traer*, to fetch or bring.

Indicative mood. Present tense.

Traygo, I bring.*traemos*, we bring.*traes*, thou bringest.*traéis*, ye bring.*tràe*, he bringeth.*tràen*, they bring.

Imperfect.

Imperfect.

Traía, I did bring. *traíamos*, we did bring.
traías, thou didst bring. *traíades*, ye did bring.
traía, he did bring. *traían*, they did bring.

Preter definite.

Truxé, I brought. *truximos*, we brought.
truxiste, thou broughtest. *truxistes*, ye brought.
truxo, he brought. *truxeron*, they brought.

Preter indefinite.

Hè traydo, I have brought.
as traydo, thou hast brought.
a traydo, he has brought.
bemos traydo, we have brought.
avéis traydo, ye have brought.
àn traydo, they have brought.

Preterpluperfect.

Avia traydo, I had brought.
avias traydo, thou hadst brought.
avia traydo, he had brought.
avíamos traydo, we had brought.
aviades traydo, ye had brought.
avian traydo, they had brought.

Future.

Traerè, I shall or will bring.
traeràs, thou shalt or wilt bring.
traerà, he shall or will bring.
traeremos, we shall or will bring.
traerèis, ye shall or will bring.
traeràn, they shall or will bring.

Imperative.

Imperative.

Tráe, bring thou.
tráete, bring him or let him bring.
tráigamos, let us bring.
traed, bring ye.
tráigan, let them bring.

Optative and Subjunctive. Present tense.

Trayga, I may, when I do bring.
traygas, thou mayst, when thou dost bring.
trayga, he may, when he doth bring.
traygamos, we may, when we do bring.
traygais, ye may, when ye do bring.
tráigan, they may, when they do bring.

Imperfect.

Truxera, *truxesse*, I might, could, would bring,
 when, though I did bring.
truxeras, *truxesses*, thou mightst, couldst, wouldst
 bring, when, though thou didst bring.
truxera, *truxesse*, he might, could, would bring,
 when, though he did bring.
truxéramos, *truxéssamos*, we might, could, would
 bring, when, though we did bring.
truxérades, *truxéssades*, ye might, could, would bring,
 when, though ye did bring.
truxéran, *truxéssen*, they might, could, would bring,
 when, though they did bring.

Præterperfect.

Quando
aya traydo, when I have brought.
ayas traydo, when thou hast brought.

àya traydo, when he has brought.

ayàmos traydo, when we have brought.

ayàis traydo, when ye have brought.

àyan traydo, when they have brought.

Preterpluperfect.

Uvièra, uvièsse traydo, I had brought.

uvièras, uvièsses traydo, thou hadst brought.

uvièra, uvièsse traydo, he had brought.

uvièramos, uvièssemos traydo, we had brought.

uvièrades, uvièssedes traydo, ye had brought.

uvièran, uvièssen traydo, they had brought.

Uncertain.

Traeria, I would bring.

traerías, thou wouldst bring.

traeria, he would bring.

traeríamos, we would bring.

traeríades, ye would bring.

traerían, they would bring.

Future.

Quando

Truxère, when I shall bring.

truxères, when thou shalt bring.

truxère, when he shall bring.

truxerèmos, when we shall bring.

truxerèdes, when ye shall bring.

truxèren, when they shall bring.

Infinitive mood. Present tense.

Traer, to bring.

Preterperfect.

Avèr traydo, to have brought.

Future.

Future.

Acèr d'esperàr de traèr, to bring hereafter.

Gerund.

Trayèndo, in bringing.

Participle present.

El que tràe, bringing.

Participle preter.

Traydo, brought.

Participle future.

*El que bà, d'espèra de traèr, to bring hereafter**The verb poner, to lay or put.*

Indicative mood. Present tense.

*Pongo, I put.**ponèmos, we put.**pones, thou puttest.**ponèis, ye put.**pone, he putteth.**ponen, they put.*

Imperfect.

*Ponia, I did put.**poníamos, we did put.**ponías, thou didst put.**poníades, ye did put.**ponía, he hid put.**ponían, they did put.*

Preter.

*Puse, I put.**pusimos, we put.**pusiste, thou puttest.**pusistes, ye put.**puso, he put.**pusieron, they put.*

Preter

Preter indefinite.

He puesto, I have put.
às puesto, thou hast put.
à puesto, he has put.
avemos puesto, we have put.
avéis puesto, ye have put.
an puesto, they have put.

Preterpluperfect.

Avia puesto, I had put.
avias puesto, thou hadst put.
avia puesto, he had put.
avíamos puesto, we had put.
aviades puesto, ye had put.
avian puesto, they had put.

First future.

Pondrè, ponè, I shall or will put.
pondràs, ponàs, thou shalt or wilt put.
pondrà, ponà, he shall or will put.
pondrèmas, ponèmas, we shall or will put.
pondrèis, ponèis, ye shall or will put.
pondrán, ponòn, they shall or will put.

Second future.

He or tèngo de poner, I must put.
às or tiènes de poner, thou must put.
à or tiène de poner, he must put.
avemos or tenemos de poner, we must put.
avéis or tenéis de poner, ye must put.
an or tiènen de poner, they must put.

Compound tenses.

Avia de poner, I was obliged to put.
avias de poner, thou wast obliged to put.
avia de poner, he was obliged to put.
aviámos de poner, we were obliged to put.
aviades de poner, ye were obliged to put.
avian de poner, they were obliged to put.

Avrè de poner, I shall be obliged to put.
avràs de poner, thou shalt be obliged to put.
avrà de poner, he shall be obliged to put.
avrèmos de poner, we shall be obliged to put.
avrèis de poner, ye shall be obliged to put.
avràn de poner, they shall be obliged to put.

Imperative mood.

Pòn tu, put thou.
ponga el, let him put.
pongámos nosotros, let us put.
poned vosotros, put ye.
pongan ellos, or *aquellos*, let them put.

Optative and subjunctive. Present tense.

Ponga, I may or can put, when I do put.
pongas, thou mayst or canst put, when thou dost put.
ponga, he may or can put, when he does put.
pongámos, we may or can put, when we do put.
pongais, ye may or can put, when ye do put.
pongan, they may or can put, when they do put.

Quando

Imperfect.

Pusiera, pusiesse, when I did, might or could put.
pusiera, pusiesse, when thou didst, mightst or couldst put.

pusiera, pusiese, when he did, might or could put.
pusieramos, pusiessemos, when we did, might or could put.

pusierades, pusiesseades, when ye did, might or could put.

pusieran, pusiesen, when they did, might or could put.

Preterperfect.

Aya puesto, when I have put.

ayas puesto, when thou hast put.

aya puesto, when he has put.

ayamos puesto, when we have put.

ayais puesto, when ye have put.

ayan puesto, when they have put.

Preterpluperfect.

Uviëra, uviësse puesto, when I had put.

uviëras, uviësses puesto, when thou hadst put.

uviëra, uviësse puesto, when he had put.

uviëramos, uviëssemos puesto, when we had put.

uviërades, uviëssedes puesto, when ye had put.

uviëran, uviëssen puesto, when they had put.

First future.

Pusiëre, when I shall or will put.

pusiëres, when thou shalt or wilt put.

pusiëre, when he shall or will put.

pusiëremos, when we shall or will put.

pusiëredes, when ye shall or will put.

pusiëren, when they shall or will put.

Second future.

Uviëre puesto, when I shall have put.

uviëres puesto, when thou shalt have put.

uvière pueſto, when he ſhall have put.

uvièremos pueſto, when we ſhall have put.

uvièredes pueſto, when ye ſhall have put.

uvièren pueſto, when they ſhall have put.

Uncertain tenſe.

Pornia, or *pondria*, when I would put.

pornias, *pondrias*, when thou wouldſt put.

pornia, *pondria*, when he would put.

porniamos, *pondriamos*, when we would put.

porniades, *pondriades*, when ye would put.

pornian, *pondrian*, when they would put.

Infinitive mood. Preſent tenſe.

Ponèr, to put.

Preterperfect.

Aver pueſto, to have put.

Gerund.

Poniendo, in putting.

Participle.

Pueſto, put.

The verb *merecer* conjugated.

Indicative mood. Preſent tenſe.

Merezco, I deſerve or merit.

merèces, thou deſerveſt or meritelt.

merèce, he deſerves or merits.

merecèmos, we deſerve or merit.

merecèis, ye deſerve or merit.

merècen, they deſerve or merit.

Imperfect.

Imperfect.

Merecia, I did merit.
merecias, thou didst merit.
merecia, he did merit.
merecíamos, we did merit.
mereciades, ye did merit.
merecian, they did merit.

Preterperfect definite.

Mereci, I merited.
mereciste, thou meritedst.
mereció, he merited.
merecimos, we merited.
merecistes, ye merited.
merecieron, they merited.

Preterperfect indefinite.

Hè merecido, I have merited.
as merecido, thou hast merited.
à merecido, he has merited.
havèmos merecido, we have merited.
avèis merecido, ye have merited.
àn merecido, they have merited.

Preterpluperfect.

Avia merecido, I had merited.
avias merecido, thou hadst merited.
avia merecido, he had merited.
avíamos merecido, we had merited.
aviades merecido, ye had merited.
avian merecido, they had merited.

First future.

Merecerè, I shall or will merit.

mereceràs, thou shalt or wilt merit.

merecerà, he shall or will merit.

merecerèmos, we shall or will merit.

merecereis, ye shall or will merit.

merecerà, they shall or will merit.

Second future.

Hè ò tenga de merecer, I must merit.

às de merecer, thou must merit.

à de merecer, he must merit.

bèmos de merecer, we must merit.

avèis de merecer, ye must merit.

àn de merecer, they must merit.

Compound tenses.

Singular.

Avià de merecer, I ought to have merited.

avias de merecer, thou oughtest to have merited.

avia de merecer, he ought to have merited.

Plural.

Aviàmos de merecer, we ought to have merited.

aviàdes de merecer, ye ought to have merited.

avian de merecer, they ought to have merited.

Singular.

Avrè de merecer, I am obliged to merit.

avràs de merecer, thou art obliged to merit.

avrà de merecer, he is obliged to merit.

Plural.

Avrèmos de merecer, we are obliged to merit.

avreis de merecer, ye are obliged to merit.

avràn de merecer, they are obliged to merit.

Imperative.

Merèce tu, do thou merit.

merèzca el, let him merit.

merescamos nosotros, let us merit.

merèced vofotros, do ye merit.

merèzcan ellos or aquellos, let them merit.

Optative and subjunctive. Present.

Quando

Merèzca, when I do, may, or can merit.

merèzcas, when thou dost, mayst, or canst merit.

merèzca, when he does, may, or can merit.

merèzcamos, when we do, may, or can merit.

merèzcais, when ye do, may, or can merit.

merèzcad, when they do, may, or can merit.

Imperfect.

Merècièra, *merècièsse*, when I did merit.

merècièras, *merècièsses*, when thou didst merit.

merècièra, *merècièsse*, when he did merit.

merècièramos, *merècièssèmos*, when we did merit.

merècièradas, *merècièssèdes*, when ye did merit.

merècièran, *merècièssen*, when they did merit.

Preterperfect.

Aya merècido, when I have merited.

ayas merècido, when thou hast merited.

aya merècido, when he hath merited.

ayamos merècido, when we have merited.

ayais merècido, when ye have merited.

ayan merècido, when they have merited.

Preterpluperfect.

Quando

Uvièra, uvièsse merecido, when I had merited.
uvièras, uvièsses merecido, when thou hadst merited.
uvièra, uvièsse merecido, when he had merited.
uvièramos, uvièssemos merecido, when we had merited.
uvièrades, uvièssedes merecido, when ye had merited.
uvièran, uvièssen merecido, when they had merited.

First future.

Merecièrè, when I shall merit.
merecièras, when thou shalt merit.
merecièrè, when he shall merit.
merecièremos, when we shall merit.
merecièredes, when ye shall merit.
merecièren, when they shall merit.

Second future.

Uvièrè merecido, when I shall have merited.
uvièrès merecido, when thou shalt have merited.
uvièrè merecido, when he shall have merited.
uvièrèmos merecido, when we shall have merited.
uvièredes merecido, when ye shall have merited.
uvièren merecido, when they shall have merited.

Uncertain tense.

Merecerìa, I would merit.
merecerìas, thou wouldst merit.
merecerìa, he would merit.
merecerìamos, we would merit.
merecerìades, ye would merit.
merecerìan, they would merit.

Infinitive mood. Present tense.

Merecèr, to merit.

Preterperfect.

Avèr merecido, to have merited.

Future.

Avèr de merecèr, to merit hereafter.

Gerund.

Merecièndo, in meriting.

Participle

Merecido, merited.

A list of verbs conjugated after the same manner as
merecer.

Conocèr, *yo conòsco*, to know, I know.

crecèr, *crèscò*, to grow, I grow.

compadecèr, *compadèscò*, to compassionate, I com-
passionate.

Encarecèr, *encarèscò*, to extol, I extol.

enflaquècèr, *enflaquèscò*, to weaken, I weaken.

enriquecèr, *enriquèscò*, to enrich, I enrich.

empobrecèr, *empobrèscò*, to become poor, I become
poor.

endurecèr, *endurèscò*, to wax hard, I wax hard.

engrandecèr, *engrandèscò*, to aggravate, I aggravate.

entristecèr, *entristèscò*, to afflict, I afflict.

ennoblecèr, *ennoblèscò*, to ennoble, I ennoble.

ensoberbecèrse, *me ensobervèscò*, to grow proud, I
grow proud.

enmudecèr, enmudèsko, to become dumb, I become dumb.

envegèser, envegèsko, to grow old, I grow old.

establecèr, establèsko, to establish, I establish.

Fenecèr, fenèsko, to finish, I finish.

fallecèr, fallèsko, to fail, I fail.

florcèr, florèsko, to flourish, I flourish.

fortalècer, fortalèsko, to fortify, I fortify.

favorecèr, favoresko, to favour, I favour.

Guarnecèr, guarnèsko, to garnish, I garnish.

Nacèr, nàsko, to be born, I am born.

Ofrecèr, ofrèsko, to offer, I offer.

obedecèr, obedèsko, to obey, I obey.

Padecèr, padèsko, to suffer, I suffer.

parecèr, parèsko, to seem, to appear, to be likely, I appear.

pacèr, pàsko, to pasture, I pasture.

Reconocèr, reconòsko, to acknowledge, I acknowledge.

Conjugation of regular verbs in *ir*.

Indicative mood and present tense of the verb *subir*,
to go up.

Subo, I go up.

subimos, we go up.

subes, thou goest up.

subís, ye go up.

sube, he goeth up.

suben, they go up.

Imperfect.

Subía, I did go up.

subíamos, we did go up.

subías, thou didst go up.

subíades, ye did go up.

subía, he did go up.

subían, they did go up.

Preterperfect definite.

Subí, I went up.

subimos, we went up.

subiste, thou wentst up.

subistes, ye went up.

subió, he went up.

subieron, they went up.

Preter-

Preterperfect indefinite.

He subido, I have gone up.
às subido, thou hast gone up.
à subido, he has gone up.
bemos or avemos subido, we have gone up.
aveis subido, ye have gone up.
àn subido, they have gone up.

Preterpluperfect.

Avia subido, I had gone up.
avias subido, thou hadst gone up.
avia subido, he had gone up.
aviamos subido, we had gone up.
aviades subido, ye had gone up.
avian subido, they had gone up.

First future.

Subirè, I shall or will go up.
subiràs, thou shalt or wilt go up.
subira, he shall or will go up.
subirèmos, we shall or will go up.
subirèis, ye shall or will go up.
subiràn, they shall or will go up.

Second future.

Hè or tengo de subir, I must go up.
às, thou must go up.
à, he must go up.
èmos or avemos, we must go up.
aveis, ye must go up.
an, they must go up.

Impe-

Imperative mood!

Sube tu, go thou up.*suba aquel*, let him go up.*subamos nosotros*, let us go up.*subid vosotros*, go ye up.*suban ellos ó aquellos*, let them go up.

Optative and subjunctive. Present tense.

Suba, I may go up.*subamos*, we may go up.*subas*, thou mayst go up.*subades*, ye may go up.*suba*, he may go up.*suban*, they may go up.

Imperfect.

Subiera, *subièsse*, I could or might go up.*subieras*, *subièsses*, thou couldst or mightst go up.*subiera*, *subièsse*, he could or might go up.*subiéramos*, *subièssemos*, we could or might go up.*subierades*, *subièssedes*, ye could or might go up.*subieran*, *subièssen*, they could or might go up.

Preterperfect.

aya subido, I have gone up.*ayas subido*, thou hast gone up.*aya subido*, he has gone up.*ayamos subido*, we have gone up.*ayais subido*, ye have gone up.*ayan subido*, they have gone up.

Preterpluperfect.

Uviera, *uvièsse subido*, I had gone up.*uvièras*, *uvièsses subido*, thou hadst gone up.*uvièra*, *uvièsse subido*, he had gone up.

uvièramos, uvièssemos subido, we had gone up.
uvièrades, uvièssedes subido, ye had gone up.
uvièran, uvièssen subido, they had gone up.

First future.

Quando subière, when I shall go up.
quando subières, when thou shalt go up.
quando subière, when he shall go up.
quando subièremos, when we shall go up.
quando subièredes, when ye shall go up.
quando subièren, when they shall go up.

Second future.

Uvière subido, I shall have gone up.
uvières subido, thou shalt have gone up.
uvière subido, he shall have gone up.
uvièremos subido, we shall have gone up.
uvièredes subido, ye shall have gone up.
uvièren subido, they shall have gone up.

Uncertain tense.

Subiria, I would go up.
subirias, thou wouldst go up.
subiria, he would go up.
subiriamos, we would go up.
subiriades, ye would go up.
subirian, they would go up.

Infinitive mood. Present tense.

Subir, to go up.

Preterperfect.

Aver subido, to have gone up.

Future.

Future.

Aver de subir, to go up hereafter.

Gerund.

Subiendo, in going up.

Participle.

Subido, gone up.A list of verbs conjugated after the manner of *subir*.*Añadir*, to annex.*Consumir*, to consume.*Esgrimir*, to fence, to flourish a weapon.*Fingir*, to counterfeit.*Hinchir*, to fill.*Permitir*, to permit.*Presumir*, to presume.*Recibir*, to receive.*Sufrir*, to suffer.*Tundir*, to shear cloth.

The verbs *abrir*, to open; *escribir*, to write; *cubrir*, to cover; and *descubrir*, to discover; are regular throughout, except in the participle of the preter tense; for *subir* makes *subido*, but *abrir* makes *abierto*, *escribir* *escrito*, *cubrir* *cubierto*, and so its compound *descubierto*.

Conjugation of verbs irregular in *ir*.Indicative mood. Present tense of *dezir*.*Digo*, I say.*decimos*, we say.*dizes*, thou sayest.*decís*, ye say.*dize*, he sayeth.*dizen*, they say.

Preter.

Preterim perfect.

Dezia, I did say. *dezíamos*, we did say.
dezias, thou didst say. *dezíades*, ye did say.
dezia, he did say. *dezían*, they did say.

Preterperfect definite.

Dixe, I said. *diximos*, we said.
dixiste, thou saidst. *dixistes*, ye said.
dixo, he said. *dixeron*, they said.

Preterperfect indefinite.

He dicho, I have said.
as dicho, thou hast said.
a dicho, he has said.
bemos dicho, we have said.
avéis dicho, ye have said.
àn dicho, they have said.

Preterpluperfect.

Avia dicho, I had said.
avias dicho, thou hadst said.
avia dicho, he had said.
avíamos dicho, we had said.
aviades dicho, ye had said.
avian dicho, they had said.

First future.

Dirè, I shall or will say.
diràs, thou shalt or wilt say.
dirà, he shall or will say.
dirèmos, we shall or will say.
dirèis, ye shall or will say.
diràn, they shall or will say.

Second future.

He or *tengo de dezir*, I must say.
às or *tiènes de dezir*, thou must say.
à or *tiène de dezir*, he must say.
avèmas or *tenemos de dezir*, we must say.
avèis or *tenèis de dezir*, ye must say.
an or *tiènen de dezir*, they must say.

Imperative mood.

Di tu, say thou or tell.
diga aquel, let him say.
digamos nosòtros, let us say.
dezid vosòtros, say ye.
digan ellos ò aquèllos, let them say.

Optative and subjunctive. Present tense.

Diga, when I say. *digamos*, when we say.
digas, when thou sayst. *digaies*, when ye say.
diga, when he says. *digan*, when they say.

Imperfect.

Dixèra, *dixèsse*, I could or might say, when I did say.
dixèras, *dixèsses*, thou couldst or mightst say, when thou didst say.
dixèra, *dixèsse*, he could or might say, when he did say.
dixèramos, *dixèssèmas*, we could or might say, when we did say.
dixèrades, *dixèssèdes*, ye could or might say, when ye did say.
dixèran, *dixèssen*, they could or might say, when they did say.

Præter-

Preterimperfect.

Quando

àya dicho, when I have said.
àyas dicho, when thou hast said.
àya dicho, when he has said.
ayàmos dicho, when we have said.
ayàis dicho, when ye have said.
àyan dicho, when they have said.

Preterpluperfect.

Uvièra, uvièsse dicho, when I had said.
uvièras, uvièsses dicho, when thou hadst said.
uvièra, uvièsse dicho, when he had said.
uvièramos, uvièssèmos dicho, when we had said.
uvièrades, uvièssedes dicho, when ye had said.
uvièran, uvièssen dicho, when they had said.

First future.

Dixère, when I shall or will say.
dixères, when thou shalt or wilt say.
dixère, when he shall or will say.
dixèremos, when we shall or will say.
dixèredes, when ye shall or will say.
dixèren, when they shall or will say.

Second future.

Uvière dicho, when I shall have said.
uvières dicho, when thou shalt have said.
uvière dicho, when he shall have said.
uvièremos dicho, when we shall have said.
uvièredes dicho, when ye shall have said.
uvièren dicho, when they shall have said.

Uncertain tense.

Diria, I would say. *diríamos*, we would say.
dirías, thou wouldst say. *diríades*, ye would say.
diría, he would say. *dirían*, they would say.

Infinitive mood. Present tense.

Dezir, to say.

Preterperfect.

Avèr dicho, to have said.

Future.

Avèr de dezir, to say hereafter.

Gerund.

Diziendo, in saying.

Participle.

Dicho, said.

The verb *oir* conjugated.

Indicative mood. Present tense.

Oigo, I hear. *oímos*, we hear.
oyes, thou hearest. *oys*, ye hear.
oye, he hears. *oyen*, they hear.

Preterimperfect.

Oía, I did hear. *oyamos*, we did hear.
oías, thou didst hear. *oyades*, ye did hear.
oía, he did hear. *oyan*, they did hear.

Preterperfect definite.

Oí, I heard. *oímos*, we heard.
oíste, thou heardst. *oíste*, ye heard.
oyó, he heard. *oieron*, they heard.

Preter.

Preterperfect indefinite.

Hè oïdo, I have heard.
às oïdo, thou hast heard.
a oïdo, he has heard.
avèmos oïdo, we have heard.
avèis oïdo, ye have heard.
àn oïdo, they have heard.

Idem.

Uve oïdo, I have heard.
uviste oïdo, thou hast heard.
uvo oïdo, he has heard.
uvimos oïdo, we have heard.
uvistes oïdo, ye have heard.
uvieron oïdo, they have heard.

Preterpluperfect.

Avia oïdo, I had heard.
avias oïdo, thou hadst heard.
avia oïdo, he had heard.
aviamos oïdo, we had heard.
aviades oïdo, ye had heard.
avian odio, they had heard.

First future.

Oirè, I shall or will hear.
oiràs, thou shalt or wilt hear.
oirà, he shall or will hear.
oiremos, we shall or will hear.
oireis, ye shall or will hear.
oiran, they shall or will hear.

Imperative.

òye tu, hear thou.*òiga el*, let him hear.*oigàmos nosòtros*, hear we.*òid vosòtros*, hear ye.*òigan ellos ò aquellos*, let them hear.

Optative and subjunctive. Present tense.

òiga, when I do, I can or may hear.*òigas*, when thou doest, thou canst or mayst hear.*òiga*, when he doth, he can or may hear.*oigàmos*, when we do, we may or can hear.*oigais*, when ye do, ye may or can hear.*òigan*, when they do, they may or can hear.

Preterimperfect.

Oyèra, *oyèsse*, when I did, I might or could hear.*oyèras*, *oyèsses*, when thou didst, thou mightst or couldst hear.*oyèra*, *oyèsse*, when he did, he might or could hear.*oyèramos*, *oyèssèmos*, when we did, we might or could hear.*oyèrades*, *oyèssèdes*, when ye did, ye might or could hear.*oyèran*, *oyèssen*, when they did, they might or could hear.

Uncertain.

Oyria, I would hear.*oyrias*, thou wouldst hear.*oyria*, he would hear.*oyriamos*, we would hear.*oyriades*, ye would hear.*oyrian*, they would hear.

Preter-

Preterperfect.

àya oido, though I have heard.

ayàs oido, though thou hast heard.

àya oido, though he has heard.

ayàmos oido, though we have heard.

ayàis oido, though ye have heard.

àyan oido, though they have heard.

Preterpluperfect.

Uvièra, uvièsse oido, when I had heard.

uvièras, uvièsses oido, when thou hadst heard.

uvièra, uvièsse oido, when he had heard.

uvièramos, uvièssemos oido, when we had heard.

uvièrades, uvièssedes oido, when ye had heard.

uvièran, uvièssen oido, when they had heard.

First future.

Oyere, I shall or will hear.

oyeres, thou shalt or wilt hear.

oyere, he shall or will hear.

oyeremos, we shall or will hear.

oyeredes, ye shall or will hear.

oyeren, they shall or will hear.

Second future.

Uvière oido, when I shall have heard.

uvières oido, when thou shalt have heard.

uvière oido, when he shall have heard.

uvièremos oido, when we shall have heard.

uvièredes oido, when ye shall have heard.

uvièren oido, when they shall have heard.

Infinitive mood. Present tense.

Oir, to hear.

Preter.

Aver oido, to have heard.

Future.

Aver de oir, to hear hereafter.

Gerund.

Oyendo, in hearing.

Participle.

Oydo, heard.

Conjugation of the verb servir.

Indicative mood. Present tense.

Sirvo, I serve, I wait.

sirves, thou servest, thou waitest.

sirve, he serves, he waits.

servimos, we serve, we wait.

servís, ye serve, ye wait.

sirven, they serve, they wait.

Preterimperfect.

Servía, I did serve.

servías, thou didst serve.

servía, he did serve.

servíamos, we did serve.

servíades, ye did serve.

servían, they did serve.

Preter.

Preterperfect definite.

Servi, I served. *servimos*, we served.
serviste, thou servedst. *servistes*, ye served.
serviò, he served. *servieron*, they served.

Preter indefinite.

He servido, I have served.
as servido, thou hast served.
a servido, he has served.
avemos servido, we have served.
aveis servido, ye have served.
an servido, they have served.

Idem.

uve servido, I have served.
uviste servido, thou hast served.
uvo servido, he has served.
uvimos servido, we have served.
uvistes servido, ye have served.
uvieron servido, they have served.

Preterpluperfect.

Avia servido, I had served.
avias servido, thou hadst served.
avia servido, he had served.
aviamos servido, we had served.
aviades servido, ye had served.
avian servido, they had served.

Future.

Servirè, I shall or will serve.
serviràs, thou shalt or wilt serve.
servira, he shall or will serve.

sirviremos, we shall or will serve.

sirvireis, ye shall or will serve.

sirvirán, they shall or will serve.

Idem.

He or *tengo de servir*, I must serve.

as or *tienes de servir*, thou must serve.

à or *tiene de servir*, he must serve.

avèmos or *tenèmos de servir*, we must serve.

avèis or *tèneis de servir*, ye must serve.

àn or *tienen de servir*, they must serve.

Compound tenses.

Avia de servir, I ought to have served.

avias de servir, thou oughtest to have served.

avia de servir, he ought to have served.

aviamos de servir, we ought to have served.

aviades de servir, ye ought to have served.

avian de servir, they ought to have served.

Avrè de servir, I am obliged to serve.

avràs de servir, thou art obliged to serve.

avrà de servir, he is obliged to serve.

avrèamos de servir, we are obliged to serve.

avrèis de servir, ye are obliged to serve.

avràn de servir, they are obliged to serve.

Imperative.

Sirve tu, serve thou.

sirva el, let him serve.

sirvamos nosotros, serve we.

servid vosotros, serve ye.

sirvan ellos ó aquellos, let them serve.

Sub-

Subjunctive and optative. Present tense.

Sirva, when I do, I may or can serve.
sirvas, when thou dost, thou mayst or canst serve.
sirva, when he doth, he may or can serve.
sirvamos, when we do, we may or can serve.
sirvais, when ye do, ye may or can serve.
sirvan, when they do, they may or can serve.

Preterimperfect.

Sirvièra, *sirvièsse*, when I did, I might or could serve.
sirvièras, *sirvièsses*, when thou didst, thou mightst or couldst serve.
sirvièra, *sirvièsse*, when he did, he might or could serve.
sirvièramos, *sirvièssèmos*, when we did, we might or could serve.
sirvièrades, *sirvièssèdes*, when ye did, ye might or could serve.
sirvièran, *sirvièssen*, when they did, they might or could serve.

Preterperfect.

àya servido, though I have served.
àyas servido, though thou hast served.
àya servido, though he hath served.
ayàmos servido, though we have served.
ayàis servido, though ye have served.
àyan servido, though they have served.

Preterpluperfect.

Uvièra, *uvièsse servido*, when I had served.
uvièras, *uvièsses servido*, when thou hadst served.

uvièra,

uvièra, uvièsse servido, when he had served.

uvièramos, uvièssèmos servido, when we had served.

uvièrades, uvièssèdes servido, when ye had served.

uvièran, uvièssen servido, when they had served.

Uncertain tense.

Servirìa, I would serve.

servirìas, thou wouldst serve.

servirìa, he would serve.

servirìamos, we would serve.

servirìades, ye would serve.

servirìan, they would serve.

First future.

Servirè, I shall or will serve.

servirès, thou shalt or wilt serve.

servirè, he shall or will serve.

servirèmos, we shall or will serve.

servirèdes, ye shall or will serve.

servirèn, they shall or will serve.

Second future.

Uvière servido, when I shall have served.

uvières servido, when thou shalt have served.

uvière servido, when he shall have served.

uvièremos servido, when we shall have served.

uvièredes servido, when ye shall have served.

uvièren servido, when they shall have served.

Infinitive present.

Servir, to serve.

Preter.

Aver servido, to have served.

Future.

Future.

Aver de servir, to serve hereafter.

Gerund.

Sirviendo, serving.

Participle preter.

Servido, served.

A list of verbs conjugated after the same manner.

Gemir, *gìmo*, to sigh, I sigh.

Medir, *mido*, to measure, I measure.

Pedir, *pido*, to ask, I ask.

Persequir, *persìgo*, to persecute, I persecute.

Prosequir, *prosìgo*, to follow on, to prosecute, I follow on, I prosecute.

Reñir, *riño*, to wrangle, I wrangle.

Seguir, *sìgo*, to follow, I follow.

Vestir, *vìsto*, to clothe, I clothe.

Indicative mood. Present tense.

Singular.

Me arrepiento, I do repent.

te arrepientes, thou dost repent.

se arrepiente, he doth repent.

Plural.

Nos arrepentimos, we do repent.

os arrepentiis, ye do repent.

se arrepienten, they do repent.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Me arrepentia, I did repent.

te arrepentias, thou didst repent.

se arrepentia, he did repent.

Plural.

Nos arrepentiamos, we did repent.

os arrepentíades, ye did repent.

se arrepentían, they did repent.

Perfect.

Singular.

Me arrepenti, I have repented.

te arrepentiste, thou hast repented.

se arrepentió, he has repented.

Plural.

Nos arrepentimos, we have repented.

os arrepentistes, ye have repented.

se arrepentieron, they have repented.

Indefinite.

Me he arrepentido, I have repented.

te has arrepentido, thou hast repented.

se he arrepentido, he has repented.

Plural.

Nos havemos arrepentido, we have repented.

os aveis arrepentido, ye have repented.

se han arrepentido, they have repented.

Pluperfect.

Singular.

Me havia arrepentido, I had repented.

te havias arrepentido, thou hadst repented.

se havia arrepentido, he had repented.

Plural.

Plural.

Nos baxiamos arrepentido, we had repented.

os baviades arrepentido, ye had repented.

se bavian arrepentido, they had repented.

Future.

Singular.

Me arrepentirè, I shall or will repent.

te arrepentiràs, thou shalt or wilt repent.

se arrepentirà, he shall or will repent.

Plural.

Nos arrepentirèmos, we shall or will repent.

os arrepentireis, ye shall or will repent.

se arrepentiràn, they shall or will repent.

Imperative.

Singular.

Arrepientate, repent thou, or do thou repent.

arrepientese, let him repent.

Plural.

Arrepentamosnos, let us repent.

arrepentidos, repent ye, or do ye repent.

arrepientanse, let them repent.

Subjunctive.

Singular.

Me arrepienta, I may or can repent.

te arrepientas, thou mayst or canst repent.

se arrepienta, he may or can repent.

Plural.

Nos arrepentamos, we may or can repent.

os arrepentais, ye may or can repent.

se arrepientan, they may or can repent.

Imperfect.

Singular.

Me arrepentiera, I might, could or would repent.
te arrepentieras, thou mightst, couldst or wouldst repent.

se arrepentiera, he might, could or would repent.

Plural.

Nos arrepentieramos, we might, could or would repent.

os arrepentierades, ye might, could or would repent.

se arrepentieran, they might, could or would repent.

Idem.

Singular.

Me arrepentiesse, I might, could or would repent.
te arrepentiesse, thou mightst, couldst or wouldst repent.

se arrepentiesse, he might, could or would repent.

Plural.

Nos arrepentiéssemos, we might, could or would repent.

os arrepentiéssedes, ye might, could or would repent.

se arrepentiéssen, they might, could or would repent.

Perfect.

Singular.

Me aya arrepentido, I might, could or would have repented.

te aya arrepentido, thou mightst, couldst or wouldst have repented.

se

The Spanish Grammar. 191

se aya arrepentido, he might, could or would have repented.

Plural.

Nos ayamos arrepentido, we might, could or would have repented.

os ayais arrepentido, ye might, could or would have repented.

se ayan arrepentido, they might, could or would have repented.

Pluperfect.

Singular.

Me uvièra, uvièsse arrepentido, I might, could, would have, or had repented.

te uvièras, uvièsses arrepentido, thou mightst, couldst, wouldst have, or had repented.

se uvièra, uvièsse arrepentido, he might, could, would have, or had repented.

Plural.

Nos uvièramos, uvièssèmos arrepentido, we might, could, would have, or had repented.

os uvièrades, uvièssèdes arrepentido, ye might, could, would have, or had repented.

se uvièran, uvièssen arrepentido, they might, could, would have, or had repented.

Uncertain tense.

Singular.

Me arrepentiria, I would have repented.

te arrepentirias, thou wouldst have repented.

se arrepentiria, he would have repented.

Plural.

Nos arrepentiriamos, we would have repented.

os arrepentiríades, ye would have repented.

se arrepentirian, they would have repented.

Future

1192 The Spanish Grammar.

Future.

Singular.

Quando

Me arrepentiere, when I shall have repented.

te arrepentieres, when thou shalt have repented.

se arrepentiere, when he shall have repented.

Plural.

Nos arrepentiremos, when we shall have repented.

os arrepentiredes, when ye shall have repented.

se arrepentieren, when they shall have repented.

Second future.

Singular.

Quando

Me uviere arrepentido, when I must have repented.

te uvières arrepentido, when thou must have repented.

se uviere arrepentido, when he must have repented.

Plural.

Nos uviéremos arrepentido, when we must have repented.

os uviéredes arrepentido, when ye must have repented.

se uviéren arrepentido, when they must have repented.

Infinitive.

Arrepentirse, to repent.

Preterperfect.

Averse de arrepentir, to have or had repented.

Gerund.

Arrepentíendose, repenting.

Participle.

Participle present.

Arrepentídose, repenting.

Conjugation of the verb *ir*, to go.

Indicative mood. Present.

Voy, I go.

vàs, thou goest.

và, he goeth.

vamos, we go.

vàis, ye go.

vàn, they go.

Preterimperfect.

iva, I did go.

ivas, thou didst go.

iva, he did go.

ivamos, we did go.

ivades, ye did go.

ivan, they did go.

Preterperfect definite.

Fuy, I went.

fuiſte, thou wentest.

fue, he went.

fuimos, we went.

fuiſtes, ye went.

fuéron, they went.

Preterperfect indefinite.

Hè ido, I have gone.

às ido, thou haſt gone.

à ido, he hath gone.

avèmos ido, we have gone.

avèis ido, ye have gone.

àn ido, they have gone.

Preterpluperfect.

Avia ido, I had gone.

avias ido, thou hadſt gone.

avia ido, he had gone.

avíamos ido, we had gone.

aviades ido, ye had gone.

avian ido, they had gone.

First future.

Irè, I shall or will go. *irèmos*, we shall or will go.
iràs, thou shalt or wilt go. *irèis*, ye shall or will go.
irà, he shall or will go. *iràn*, they shall or will go.

Second future.

He or *tengo de ir*, I must go.
as or *tiènes de ir*, thou must go.
a or *tiène de ir*, he must go.
avèmos or *tenèmos de ir*, we must go.
avèis or *tenèis de ir*, ye must go.
àn or *tiènen de ir*, they must go.

Compound tenses.

Singular.

Avia de ir, I ought to have gone.
avias de ir, thou oughtest to have gone.
avia de ir, he ought to have gone.

Plural.

Aviamos de ir, we ought to have gone.
aviades de ir, ye ought to have gone.
avian de ir, they ought to have gone.

Singular.

Avrè de ir, I am obliged to be gone.
avràs de ir, thou art obliged to be gone.
avrà de ir, he is obliged to be gone.

Plural.

Avrèmos de ir, we are obliged to be gone.
avrèis de ir, ye are obliged to be gone.
avràn de ir, they are obliged to be gone.

Imperative.

Vè tu, go thou.

vàya el, let him go.

vàmos nosotros, let us go.

id vosotros, go ye.

vàyan ellos ó aquellos, let them go.

Optative and subjunctive.

Vaya, I may or can go, when I do go.

vayas, thou mayst or canst go, when thou dost go.

vaya, he may or can go, when he doth go.

vayamos, we may or can go, when we do go.

vayais, ye may or can go, when ye do go.

vàyan, they may or can go, when they do go.

Imperfect.

Fuèra, *fuèsse*, when I did, might, or could go.

fuèras, *fuèsses*, when thou didst, mightst, or couldst go.

fuèra, *fuèsse*, when he did, might, or could go.

fuèramos, *fuèssemos*, when we did, might, or could go.

fuèrades, *fuèssedes*, when ye did, might, or could go.

fuèran, *fuèssen*, when they did, might, or could go.

Preterperfect.

Quando

àya ido, when I have gone.

àyas ido, when thou hast gone.

àya ido, when he hath gone.

ayamos ido, when we have gone.

ayais ido, when ye have gone.

àyan ido, when they have gone.

Preterpluperfect.

Quando

Uvièra, uvièsse ido, when I had gone.*uvièras, uvièsses ido*, when thou hadst gone.*uvièra, uvièsse ido*, when he had gone.*uvièramos, uvièssemos ido*, when we had gone.*uvièrades, uvièssedes ido*, when ye had gone.*uvièran, uvièssen ido*, when they had gone.

Uncertain.

*Iria, I would go.**iríamos, we would go.**irías, thou wouldst go.**iríades, ye would go.**iría, he would go.**irían, they would go.*

First future.

Quando fuère, when I shall or will go.*quando fuères*, when thou shalt or wilt go.*quando fuère*, when he shall or will go.*quando fuèremos*, when we shall or will go.*quando fuèredes*, when ye shall or will go.*quando fuèren*, when they shall or will go.

Second future.

Quando

Uvièrt ido, when I shall have gone.*uvières ido*, when thou shalt have gone.*uvièrt ido*, when he shall have gone.*uvièremos ido*, when we shall have gone.*uvièredes ido*, when ye shall have gone.*uvièren ido*, when they shall have gone.

Infinitive mood. Present tense.

Ir, to go.

Pre-

Preterperfect.

Aver ido, to have gone.

Future.

Aver de ir, to go hereafter.

Gerund.

Yendo, in going.

Preterperfect participle.

Ido, gone.

Conjugation of the verb *advertir*, to take heed of, to mark, to look to carefully, to weigh and consider, to give warning, or admonish.

Indicative mood. Present.

Advierto, I take notice.
adviertes, thou takest notice.
advierte, he taketh notice.
advertimos, we take notice.
advertís, ye take notice.
avierten, they take notice.

Imperfect.

Advertía, I did heed. *advertíamos*, we did heed.
advertías, thou didst heed. *advertíades*, ye did heed.
advertía, he did heed. *advertían*, they did heed.

Preterperfect definite.

Advertí, I took heed.
advertiste, thou tookst heed.
advertió, he took heed.

advertimos, we took heed.

advertistes, ye took heed.

advertieron, they took heed.

Preterperfect indefinite.

Hè advertido, I have taken heed.

às advertido, thou hast taken heed.

à advertido, he hath taken heed.

avemos advertido, we have taken heed.

avéis advertido, ye have taken heed.

àn advertido, they have taken heed.

Idem.

Uve advertido, I have taken heed.

uviste advertido, thou hast taken heed.

uvo advertido, he hath taken heed.

uvimos advertido, we have taken heed.

uvistes advertido, ye have taken heed.

uvieron advertido, they have taken heed.

Preterpluperfect.

Avia advertido, I had taken heed.

avias advertido, thou hadst taken heed.

avia advertido, he had taken heed.

avíamos advertido, we had taken heed.

aviades advertido, ye had taken heed.

avian advertido, they had taken heed.

First future.

Advertirè, I shall or will take heed.

advertiràs, thou shalt or wilt take heed.

advertirà, he shall or will take heed.

advertirèmos, we shall or will take heed.

advertirèis, ye shall or will take heed.

advertiràn, they shall or will take heed.

Second future.

He or *tengo de advertir*, I must take heed.
às or *tiènes de advertir*, thou must take heed.
à or *tiene de advertir*, he must take heed.
avèmos or *tenemos de advertir*, we must take heed.
avèis or *tenèis de advertir*, ye must take heed.
an or *tiènen de advertir*, they must take heed.

Imperative.

Advierte tu, take thou heed.
advierta el, let him take heed.
advertàmos nosotros, let us take heed.
advertid vosotros, take ye heed.
aviertan ellos ó aquéllos, let them take heed.

Optative and subjunctive. Present.

Advierta, when I do, may, or can take heed.
adviertas, when thou dost, mayst, or canst take heed.
advierta, when he does, may, or can take heed.
advertàmos, when we do, may, or can take heed.
avèrtais, when ye do, may, or can take heed.
aviertan, when they do, may, or can take heed.

Imperfect.

Advertiera, *advertièsse*, I might, could, when I did take heed.
advertieras, *advertièsses*, thou mightst, couldst, when thou didst take heed.
advertiera, *advertièsse*, he might, could, when he did take heed.
advertieramos, *advertièssèmos*, we might, could, when we did take heed.

advertièrades, advertièssedes, ye might, could, when ye did take heed.

advertièran, advertièssen, they might, could, when they did take heed.

Preterperfect.

Quando

àya advertido, when I have taken heed.

àyas advertido, when thou hast taken heed.

àya advertido, when he has taken heed.

ayàmos advertido, when we have taken heed.

ayàis advertido, when ye have taken heed.

ayàn advertido, when they have taken heed.

Preterpluperfect.

Uvièra, uvièsse advertido, when I had taken heed.

uvièras, uvièsses advertido, when thou hadst taken heed.

uvièra, uvièsse advertido, when he had taken heed.

uvièramos, uvièssemos advertido, when we had taken heed.

uvièrades, uvièssedes advertido, when ye had taken heed.

uvièran, uvièssen advertido, when they had taken heed.

First future.

Advertièrè, when I shall or will take heed.

advertièrès, when thou shalt or wilt take heed.

advertièrè, when he shall or will take heed.

advertièrèmos, when we shall or will take heed.

advertièrèdes, when ye shall or will take heed.

advertièrèn, when they shall or will take heed.

Second future.

Quando

Uviere advertido, when I shall have taken heed.
uvières advertido, when thou shalt have taken heed.
uviere advertido, when he shall have taken heed.
uviéremos advertido, when we shall have taken heed.
uviéredes advertido, when ye shall have taken heed.
uviéren advertido, when they shall have taken heed.

Infinitive mood.

Advertir, to take heed.
Aver advertido, to have taken heed.
aver de advertir, to take heed hereafter.
advertiendo, in taking heed.
advertido, taken heed.

A list of verbs conjugated like *advertir*.

Conferir, *confiero*, to confer upon, I confer upon.
Consentir, *consiento*, to consent, I consent.
Convertir, *convierto*, to convert, I convert.
Diferir, *difiero*, to defer, I defer.
Hervir, *hiervo*, to be hot, to boil, I boil.
Inferir, *infiero*, to infer, I infer.
Mentir, *miento*, to lye, I lye.
Proferir, *profiero*, to utter, I utter.
Referir, *refiero*, to report, I report.
Requerir, *requiero*, to require, I require.
Sentir, *siento*, to feel, I feel.
Vertir, *vierro*, to turn, I turn.

Con-

Conjugation of the verb *introduzir*, to bring in, to introduce.

Indicative mood. Present.

Introduzgo, I introduce.

introduzes, thou introducest.

introduze, he introduceth.

introduzimos, we introduce.

introduzis, ye introduce.

introduzen, they introduce.

Imperfect.

Introduzia, I did introduce.

introduzias, thou didst introduce.

introduzia, he did introduce.

introduziamos, we did introduce.

introduziades, ye did introduce.

introduzian, they did introduce.

Preterperfect definite.

Introduxe, I introduced.

introduxiste, thou introducedst.

introduxo, he introduced.

introduximos, we introduced.

introduxistes, ye introduced.

introduxeron, they introduced.

Preterperfect indefinite.

He introduzido, I have introduced.

as introduzido, thou hast introduced.

ha introduzido, he has introduced.

avemos introduzido, we have introduced.

aveis introduzido, ye have introduced.

an introduzido, they have introduced.

Preterpluperfect.

Avia introduzido, I had introduced.
avias introduzido, thou hadst introduced.
avia introduzido, he had introduced.
aviamos introduzido, we had introduced.
aviades introduzido, ye had introduced.
avian introduzido, they had introduced.

First future.

Introduzirè, I shall or will introduce.
introduziràs, thou shalt or wilt introduce.
introduzirà, he shall or will introduce.
introduziremos, we shall or will introduce.
introduzireis, ye shall or will introduce.
introduziràn, they shall or will introduce.

Second future.

He or têngo de introduzir, I must introduce.
as or tiênes de introduzir, thou must introduce.
a or tiêne de introduzir, he must introduce.
avêmos or tenemos de introduzir, we must introduce.
avêis or tenêis de introduzir, ye must introduce.
àn or tiênen de introduzir, they must introduce.

Compound tenses.

Avia de introduzir, I ought to have introduced.
avias de introduzir, thou oughtst to have introduced.
avia de introduzir, he ought to have introduced.
aviamos de introduzir, we ought to have introduced.
aviades de introduzir, ye ought to have introduced.
avian de introduzir, they ought to have introduced.

Avrè de introduzir, I must introduce.
avràs de introduzir, thou must introduce.
avrà de introduzir, he must introduce.

avrêmos

avèrèmos de introducir, we must introduce.

avèrèis de introducir, ye must introduce.

avèràn de introducir, they must introduce.

Imperative.

Introduze tu, do thou introduce.

introduzga el, let him introduce.

introduzganos nosotros, let us introduce.

introduzid vosotros, do ye introduce.

introduzgan, ellos ó aquellos, let them introduce.

Optative and subjunctive. Present.

Quando introduzga, when I do introduce.

quando introduzgas, when thou dost introduce.

quando introduzga, when he doth introduce.

quando introduzganos, when we do introduce.

quando introduzgais, when ye do introduce.

quando introduzgan, when they do introduce.

Quando Preterimperfect.

Introduxesse, introduxera, when I did introduce.

introduxesses, introduxeras, when thou didst introduce.

introduxesse, introduxera, when he did introduce.

introduxessèmos, introduxèramos, when we did introduce.

introduxessedes, introduxerades, when ye did introduce.

introduxessen, introduxèran, when they did introduce.

Preterperfect.

àya introduzido, when I have introduced.

àyas introduzido, when thou hast introduced.

àya introduzido, when he has introduced.

ayàmos introduzido, when we have introduced.

ayàis introduzido, when ye have introduced.

ayan introduzido, when they have introduced.

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

Uvièra, uvièsse introduzido, when I had introduced.
uvièras, uvièsses introduzido, when thou hadst introduced.

uvièra, uvièsse introduzido, when he had introduced.
uvièramos, uvièssemos introduzido, when we had introduced.

uvièrades, uvièssedes introduzido, when ye had introduced.

uvièran, uvièssen introduzido, when they had introduced.

Quando

First future.

Introduxèrè, when I shall or will introduce.

introduxerès, when thou shalt or wilt introduce.

introduxerè, when he shall or will introduce.

introduxerèmos, when we shall or will introduce.

introduxerèdes, when ye shall or will introduce.

introduxerèn, when they shall or will introduce.

Second future.

Uvièrè introduzido, when I shall have introduced.

uvièrès introduzido, when thou shalt have introduced.

uvièrè introduzido, when he shall have introduced.

uvièrèmos introduzido, when we shall have introduced.

uvièrèdes introduzido, when ye shall have introduced.

uvièrèn introduzido, when they shall have introduced.

Uncertain.

Introduziria, I would introduce.

introduzirias, thou wouldst introduce.

introduziria, he would introduce.

introduziriamos, we would introduce.

introduziriaades, ye would introduce.

introduzirian, they would introduce.

Infinitive mood.

Introduzir, to introduce.*Aver introduzido*, to have introduced.*Aver de introduzir*, to introduce hereafter.*Introduziendo*, in introducing.*Introduzido*, introduced.*Conjugation of the impersonals.*

Though the conjugation of verbs impersonal is extremely easy, since it is only taking the third person singular through every mood and tense; yet that this grammar may be as little defective as possible, I shall conjugate some of these verbs for examples; and first I shall go through the verb *ser*, to be, taken impersonally.

*Conjugation of the verb ser.**Es*, no *es*, he, it is, he, it is not.*Era*, no *era*, he was, he was not.*Fue*, no *fue*, he was, he was not.*à sido*, no *à sido*, he has been, he has not been.*avia sido*, no *avia sido*, he had been, he had not been.*Serà*, no *serà*, he will, he will not be.*Como sea*, when he may be.*Si fuèra*, *si no fuèra*, if he were, if he were not.*Si sería*, *si no sería*, if he should, if he should not be.*Si fuesse*, *si no fuesse*, if he were, if he were not.*àya sido*, no *àya sido*, when he has, he has not been.*Uvièra*, no *uvièra* } *sido*, when he had, when he had
uvièsse no *uvièsse* } not been.*Que fuère*, *que no fuère*, that he shall, that he shall not be.

The verb àvèr impersonally taken.

Ay, no ay.

à or ha, no à, he has, he has not.

avia, no avia, he had, he had not.

uvo, no uvo, he had, he had not.

à avido, no à avido, he has had, he has not had.

Avia, no avia avido, he had had, he had not had.

Aurà, no aurà, he will or shall, or shall not have.

Como àya, no àya, when he may, and or not have, when he has.

*Avria, no avria } avido, when he had, when he
Uvièra, no uvièra } might, he should or should
Uvièsse, no uvièsse } not have.*

àya avido, when he has had.

*Uvièra } avido, when he had had.
uvièsse }*

Uvière, when he shall have.

The impersonal verb llover, to rain.

Llueve, it rains.

Llovia, it did rain.

Llovió, it rained.

à llovido, it has rained.

Avia llovido, it had rained.

Lloverà, it will rain.

Que llueva, let it rain.

Es menester que llueva (we use the preterimperfect in the sense the Spanish use the present), it is fit it should rain.

Si llovièra, or llovièsse, if it should or might rain, if it did rain.

Aunque àya llovido, though it has rained.

Si uvièra } *llovido*, if it had rained;
uvièsse }

Lloveria, it should rain.

Quando llueva à llovière, when it shall, or, when it does rain; for *llueva* here visibly marks a future; as well as *llovière*.

En avièndo llovido, in having rained.

Llovièndo, in raining.

Conjugation of the verb *nevàr*.

Nièva, it snows.

Nevàva, it did snow.

Nevò, it snowed.

à nevàdo, it has snowed.

Avia nevàdo, it had snowed.

Nevarà, it will snow.

Que niève, let it snow.

Es menester que niève, it is requisite it should snow
 (See the note above).

Si nevàsse, or *nevàra*, if it should, did, or might snow.

Aunque nevàra, though it shall snow.

Aunque ayà nevàdo, though it has snowed.

Si uvièra nevàdo, if it had snowed.

Nevaria, it should snow.

Quando nieve ó nevàre, when it does, or shall or will snow.

Nevàndo, in snowing.

Conjugation of the impersonal *granizar*, to hail.

Graniza, it hails.

Granizàva, it did hail.

Granizò, it has hailed, it hailed.

à grà-

à granizàdo, it has hailed.
Avia granizàdo, it had hailed.
Granizarà, it will hail.
Que granize, let it hail.
Si granizàsse, ò granizàra, if it did, if it might or should hail.
àya granizàdo, when it has hailed.
Uvièra, uvièsse granizàdo, when it had hailed.
Granizaria, it should hail.
Quando granize, or granizàre, when it does or shall hail.
Granizàndo, in hailing.

Conjugation of the verb helar, to freeze.

Yela, it freezes.
Helàva, it did freeze.
Helo, it froze.
à belàdo, it has frozen.
Avia belàdo, it had frozen.
belarà, it will freeze.
Que yèle, let it freeze.
Es menestèr que yèle, it is convenient it should freeze.
si belàsse, ò belàra, if it did, might, could, should freeze.
àya belàdo, though it has frozen.
Uvièra, uvièsse belàdo, though it had frozen.
Quàndo belàre, when it shall freeze.
Helàndo, in freezing.

Conjugation of the verb relampaguear, to lighten.

Relampaguèa, it lightens.
Relampagueàva, it did lighten.

210 The Spanish Grammar.

Relampagueò, it lightened.

a relampagueado, it has lightened.

Avia relampagueado, it had lightened.

Relampaguearà, it will lighten.

Que relampaguee, let it lighten.

Si relampagueasse, if it did lighten.

Aunque relampagueara, though it did, might, should lighten.

àya relampagueado, tho' it has, when it has lightened.

Si uvièsse or uvièra relampagueado, if it had lightened.

Relampaguearia, it would or should lighten.

Relampagueare, when it shall lighten.

Relampagueando, in lightening.

Conjugation of the verb *atronar*, to thunder.

Atruèna, it thunders.

Atronava, it did thunder.

Atronò, it thundered.

à atronado, it has thundered.

Avia atronado, it had thundered.

Atronarà, it will thunder.

Que atruène, let it thunder.

Si atronasse, or atronara, if it did, should, might, could thunder.

àya atronado, when it has thundered.

Uvièsse, or uvièra atronado, when it had thundered.

Atronaria, it would or should thunder.

Atronare, though it shall thunder.

Atronando, in thundering.

Conjugation of the verb *ahumar*, to smoke.

Abumèa, it smokes.

Akumava, it did smoke.

Abumò, it smoked.
à abumàdo, it has smoked.
Avia abumàdo, it had smoked.
Abumarà, it will smoke.
Si abume, if it did smoke.
Si abumàrà, or *abumàsse*, if it should smoke.
Si àya abumàdo, if it did smoke.
Si uvièsse, or *uvièra abumàdo*, if it had smoked.
Abumaria, it would smoke.
Abumàre, when it shall smoke.
Abumàndo, in smoking.

Conjugation of the verb heder, to stink

Fede, it stinks.
Hedia, it did stink.
Hediò, it stunk.
Ha bedido, it has stunk.
Avia bedido, it had stunk.
Hederà, it will stink.
Que bièda, let it stink.
Si bedièra, or *bedièsse*, if it did, should, or might stink.
àya bedido, when it has stunk.
Uvièra, *uvièsse bedido*, when it had stunk.
Hederia, it would or should stink.
Hedière, though it shall stink.
Hedièndo, in stinking.

Conjugation of the verb holer, to smell

Huèle, it smells.
Holia, it did smell.
Holiò, it smelled.

à holido, it has smelted.

Avia holido, it had smelted.

Holerà, it shall or will smell.

Que buèla, let it smell.

Si holièra, *holièsse*, if it did, should, or might smell.

àya holido, when it has smelt.

Uvière, *uvièsse holido*, when it had smelt.

Holeria, it would or should smell.

Holière, though it shall smell.

Holièndo, in smelling.

End of the conjugation of the verbs.

Of adverbs, prepositions, conjunctions, and interrogatives.

AS I intend this grammar to be generally useful, and that the nature of the adverb is not very well understood by those who are not conversant in grammar, I find myself under an indispensable obligation (that I may comply with what I have proposed) to give a definition of this part of speech. It declares then the manner of the action of the verb in verbs active and neuter; as, *I love sincerely*, *amo sinceramènte*; *I run swiftly*, *corro ligeramente*; where *sincerely* and *swiftly* shews the manner how you love, how you run: It shews also and determines the manner of suffering in the verb passive, as, *I am heartily hated*, *I am violently abused*, *I am wrongfully accused*, *I am unjustly persecuted*; by which examples you may perceive it is to the verb, what the adjective

adjective is to the substantive. Adverbs differ from nouns in this, that the latter are declinable, the former are not. They are divided into sundry classes, as adverbs of time, *de tiempo*; adverbs of place, *de lugar*; of quantity, *de quantidad*; of quality, *de calidad*; of negation, *de negacion*; of affirmation, *de afirmacion*; of augmentation, *de augmentacion*; of diminution, *de diminucion*; of moderation, *de moderacion*; of excess, *de exceso*; of doubting, *de duda*; of uniting, *de union*; of comparing, *de comparacion*; of order, *de orden*; of calling, and of interrogation, *de llamamiento, y de interrogacion*. Examples of each shall be given according to this division. I begin then with

Adverbs of time,

Adverbios de tiempo.

Quando, when?

oy or *oydia*, to-day.

ahier, yesterday.

mañana, to-morrow.

à la mañana, in the morning.

à la tarde, in the evening.

ahora, now.

alguna vez, sometime.

aun, yet, even.

nunca, *jamas*, never.

siempre, always.

ultimamente, lastly.

luego, presently.

mas presto, sooner.

quanto antes, as soon as possible.

a menudo, often.

de continuo

continuamente

} continually.

desde entonces, from that time.

desde que, from the time that.

despues aca, from that time to this.

de aqui en adelante, from henceforward.

entonces, then.

entretanto, in the mean while.

hasta oy, till, to this day.

hasta mañana, till to-morrow.

hasta agora, till now.

hasta alla, thitherto.

hasta aqui, hitherto.

hasta que, until that.

hasta entonces, till then.

hasta, till.

hasta tanto, to so much.

hasta quando, till when.

hasta tanto que, to so much that.

temprano, early.

la tarde, the evening.

al punto, at the instant.

luego que, as soon as.

cada, every, each.

cada y quando, as often as.

a deshoras, unseasonably.

cotidiano, daily.

Adverbios de lugar.

Adverbs of place.

De aqui
de aca

} from hence, from this side.

de alla, from thence.
de aculla, from that way.
de adentro, from within.
de afuera, from without.
de donde, from whence.
de arriba, from above.
de alto, from on high.
de cima, from the top.
de baxo, from underneath.
de cielo, from the sky.
de bondo, from the deep.
de lexos, from far.
lexos, far off.
donde, where?
por aqui, here.
por alli, there.
por ai, that way.
por donde, which way.
por este lugar, by this place.
por aquella parte, on that side.
por aquel lugar, by that place.

Adverbios de cantidad,

Adverbs of quantity.

Quanto, how much?
abundantemènte, abundantly.
mucho, much.
muy, very, as *muy mucho*, very much.
muy poco, very little.
muy bien, very, mighty well.
poco, little.
poco mas, little more.

216 The Spanish Grammar.

poco menos, little less.
tanto, so much.
tanto que, so much as.
à montones, in heaps.
poquito, very little.
poquissimo, the very least.
mucho mas, much more.
assaz, enough.
barto, full, satisfied.
demasiado, too much.
quanto mas, how much more.
tanto mas, so much more.
tanto menos, so much less.

Adverbios de calidad,

Adverbs of quality.

Bien, well.
bien es, it is well.
Buenamente, this answers to our *sincerely, innocently,*
without disguise: the French say, *bonnement*; we
 have no English word but what I have set down,
 which takes in the genuine and full sense of it.
sin dificultad, without difficulty.
mal, ill, bad.
mejor, better.
malamente, badly, wicked;
peor, worse.
adrede, purposely.
aposta, on purpose.
atrevidamente } boldly.
osadamente }
temerariamente, rashly.

tuertamente,

tuertamente, crookedly.

animosamente, bravely.

locamente, madly.

difícilmente, hardly.

difficilmente, hardly, with much pain.

floxamente, feebly, like a coward.

hermosamente, prettily.

dulcemente } sweetly.

suavemente }

donosamente, pleasantly.

sabiamente, wisely.

prudentemente, prudently.

imprudentemente, imprudently.

elegantemente, elegantly.

liberalmente, liberally.

ligeramente, nimbly.

dichosamente, happily.

gentilmente, handsomely, neatly.

graciosamente, thankfully, pleasantly, wittily,

graciously, favourably.

pulidamente, this adverb comes from *pulir*, to polish; so that if the word may be allowed, it is polishedly.

fuertemente, stoutly, strongly.

Adverbios de negacion, Adverbs of negation.

Ni, neither.

no, no.

no aun, not yet.

ni aun, nor yet.

nada, nothing.

tanpoco, as little.

en ninguna manera, by no means.

218 The Spanish Grammar.

Adverbios de afirmacion, *Adverbs of affirmation.*

Asi, thus, so.

si, *tambièn*, *cierto*, yes, also, sure.

ciertamente, certainly.

sin falta, without fail,

verdaderamente, truly.

Adverbios de augmentacion,

Adverbs of augmentation.

Mas, more.

mucho mas, much more.

algo mas, somewhat more.

Adverbios de diminucion, *Adverbs of diminution.*

Mas poco, less.

mucho menos, much less.

Adverbios de moderacion, *Adverbs of moderation.*

Callandito, soft and fair, silently.

poco à poco, little by little.

passo à passo, step by step.

de espacio, leisurely.

quietamente, quietly.

Adverbios de union, *Adverbs of union.*

Junto, together.

cabe, hard by, near to.

juntamente, jointly.

à montones, in heaps.

Adverbios de comparacion, *Adverbs of comparison.*

Tanto, so much.

quanto, how much?

como,

como, as.

casi, almost.

de esta manera, in this manner.

assi, so.

semejantemènte, in like manner.

Adverbios de exceso, *Adverbs of excess.*

Demaziado, too much.

demaziadamènte, excessively.

mucho, much.

Adverbios de excepcion, *Adverbs of exception.*

Fuera } except.
excepto }

ultra, moreover.

como, when as, even as, why, seeing that.

con tal, upon condition, so that.

Adverbios de duda, *Adverbs of doubting.*

Puede ser, it may be.

por à caso } by chance.
por ventura }

Adverbios de orden, *Adverbs of order.*

Primeramènte } principally.
principalmente }

enquànto à lo primèro, as to the first.

de aqui en adelànte, from henceforward.

finalmènte, finally.

particularmènte, particularly.

despues, after.

aca, hither.

desde, from.

al cabo, at the end.

à la postre, at the last.

Ad-

Adverbios de llamamiento, *Adverbs of calling.*
Ola, holoa.

ba, señor } holoa, sir.
bo, señor }

Adverbios de interrogacion, *Adverbs of interrogation.*

Porque ? for what, wherefore, why?

porque no ? why not?

porque causa ? on what account?

como ? how?

que ? what?

aque proposito ?
a que fin ? } to what end?

Adverbios irregulares, *Irregular adverbs.*

De camino, by the by.

de lado, on one side.

de traves, obliquely.

de bruces, belly to the ground.

à gatas, on all four.

à tuèrto, wrongfully.

en bàlde, in vain.

à trueque, in exchange.

De las preposiciones, *Of prepositions.*

THE preposition is a part of speech which always precedes its case, as its name shews. In this then it differs from the adverb, for the latter requires nothing to follow it, but concludes a perfect sense; for example, *vive bien*, he lives well; *come mucho*, he eats much, &c. But this the preposition does

does not do, without being followed by its case; as, *vino de Madrid*, he came from Madrid; *salid de la carcel*, he went out of prison; *và à la iglesia*, he goes to church; *sale de la casa*, he goes out of the house, &c. You must observe, that sometimes the preposition, having no case after it, seems to become an adverb; as, *el rèy và delante*, y *el general atras*, the king goes before, and the general behind. *Sanctius* says, That the preposition has always its case either expressed or understood, and consequently can never become an adverb, as in this example, *longo post tempore venit*, which is *longo tempore post id tempus*; so in the above example, *el roy và delante*, there is something understood and referred to, which is the case of the preposition, as, *the king goes before the army or troops, and the general comes behind the said army, &c. or the king goes before the general, and the general behind the king, &c.*

Las siguientes preposiciones piden el caso del genitivo,

These following prepositions require a genitive case after them.

Cerca, near, about.

bàxo, underneath.

abàxo, below, near.

delànte, before.

dèntro, within.

detràs, behind.

despuès, after.

fuèra, out of.

encima, upon, on the top.

enfrente,

enfrente, over-against.*àcerca*, near by.*mas aca*, more this way.*mas allà*, more that way.

Ex. *Juan vive cerca de mi casa*, John lives near my house; *mis medias estan baxo, abaxo or debaxo de la cama*, my stockings are underneath, are under the bed; *el rey và delante de los soldados*, the king goes before the soldiers; *hallè mi amigo dentro de la iglesia*, I found my friend within the church, in the church; *vi un hombre detras de la pared*, I saw a man behind the wall; *Pedro vendrà à la comedia despues de mi*, Peter will come to the play after me; *los nobles tienen sus armas encima de la puerta*, the nobility have their arms on the top, *i. e.* over the door; *yo vivo enfrente de la iglesia*, I live over-against the church; *no pude bazer nada acerca de su negocio*, I could do nothing about your business; *no puedo vivir fuèra de mi patria*, I cannot live out of my country; *vivo mas aca de la Lonja*, I live more on this side the Exchange; *mas allà de Londres muriò mi amigo*, farther beyond London my friend died.

Las siguièntes preposiciones piden el caso del dativo,

The following prepositions require a dative case after them.

à, to.*basta*, even to.*hàzia*, towards.

Ex. *Ruègole que venga à mi casa*, I desire you to come to my house; *caminarè hasta à la ciudad*, I will

will travel even to the city; *de Madrid irè bàzia à Itàlia*, from Madrid I will go towards Italy.

Las siguientes preposiciones piden el caso del acusativo,

The following prepositions require an accusative case after them.

Antes, before, rather, *coram*, *potius*.

entre, between.

en, in.

con, with.

contra, against.

para, to, for.

por, for, by.

sobre, upon.

segun, according to.

Ex. *Irè antes el rey*, I will go before the king; *en Madrid se hazen muchas injusticias*, there are many wrongs done in Madrid; *bùvo una riña entre dos amigos*, there has been a quarrel between two friends; *usted peleò valerosamente contra el enemigo comun*, you fought bravely against the common enemy; *el sombrero es para usted*, the hat is for you; *el dinero es para el*, the money is for him; *pasè por Viena es mes de Abril*, I went by Vienna in the month of April; *usted trabe sobre sus hombros una carga muy pesada*, you carry a very heavy burden on your shoulders; *segun mi parecer usted no tuvo razon de hazer lo que hizo*, according to (in) my opinion you had no reason to do what you did.

N. B. That those prepositions which require the genitive, may also be said to demand the ablative, since

since in the declension there is no difference between them, as may be observed in the following examples: *sale de la casa, vive en frente de la iglesia, for de la casa, de la iglesia*, are both in the genitive and ablative.

De las conjunciones, *Of conjunctions.*

THE conjunction is an indeclinable part of speech, which ties and unites the parts of a period. *Se dividen en conjunciones copulativas, disjunctivas, exceptivas, condicionales, de duda, declarativas, interrogativas, comparativas, augmentativas, diminutivas, causales, ilativas, conclusivas, de tiempo, de orden, y de transacción.* It is divided into conjunction copulative, conjunction disjunctive, exceptive, conditional, of doubting, declarative, interrogative, comparative, augmentative, diminutive, causal, illative, conclusive, conjunctions of time, order, and transaction.

The conjunction copulative.

This conjunction is used for the uniting two words under one affirmation or negation; the affirmatives are *y* and *tambien*, the negatives are *ni* and *ni tampoco*. Example of the first, *Pedro y Antonio*, Peter and Antony; *el rey Gorge es liberal y caritativo*, king George is liberal and charitable; *usted ama mucho la paz, y yo tambien*, you love peace, and I also. Example of the second, *usted no come ni bebe*, you neither eat nor drink; *si usted no ama las mugeres desvergonzadas, ni tampoco yo*, if you do not love lewd women, I love them as little; *si usted no quiere*

quiere ir à la comedia, ni yo tampoco, if you do not care to (if you will not) go to the play, I have as little inclination.

You must take notice, that when the word, which follows the conjunction copulative *y*, has *i* for its initial letter, the *y* is then changed into *e*; as, *Pedro è Ignacio*, &c.

Of conjunctions disjunctive.

These conjunctions separate and divide one thing from another, and are the following; *ò*, *u*, and *sea*; *sea a la buena ò a la mala haràs lo que te digo*, either by fair or foul means you shall do what I bid you; *Pedro u Juan cantará*, either Peter or John shall sing; *sea de burlas, sea de veras*, be it in jest, be it in earnest; *sea en buena, sea en mala fortuna*, be it either for good or ill fortune.

De las adverbativas, The adverbatives,

Are the following: *pero*, but; *sin embargo, ò con todo esso*, notwithstanding: as, *no es hermosa, pero me agrada*, she is not handsome, but she pleases me; *los Españoles tienen mucho dinero, pero no se aprovechan del*, the Spaniards have a great deal of money, but it is no advantage to them, they do not make a right use of it; *contodo que me prometió casamiento, sin embargo no quiso casarme*, though he (she) promised me marriage, yet notwithstanding he (she) would not marry me; *por mas que eres un picaro, sin embargo te ayudarè*, though you are a rascal, yet I will notwithstanding assist you; *por mas que Catalina me desprecie, con todo esso la estimo*, though Catharine despises me, yet notwithstanding I value, I love her.

Q

This

This Spanish diction *por mas* answers to the French *beau*, to the English *never so much*, or to no purpose; as, *por mas que pida, no me daràn nada, j'ai beau à demander, on ne me donnera rien*; it is to no purpose for me to ask, they will give me nothing; *por mas que amenace, nadie me teme, tho' I threaten never so much, no body fears me*; *por mas que usted diga, vous avez beau à dire, &c.* though you talk never so much, you speak (you talk) to no purpose; *por mas que usted ruegue, vous avez beau prier*, you ask to no purpose, your entreaties are all in vain, though you beg never so hard, though you entreat never so much; *por mas que me defièda, j'ai beau à me defendre*, it is to no purpose, to make my defence, though I defend myself never so well; *por mas que trabaje, no acabare oy, j'ai beau à travailler, je n'acheverai pas aujourd'hui*, though I work never so hard, I shall not make an end to-day.

I have made observations *en passant*, that I may give a true and just idea of the difference of the idioms, which I hope the above examples (though I have digressed to make them) will render plain and easy: I shall now go on again to the conjunctions, and treat

De las exceptivas, *Of the exceptives*;

Which are *sino*, if not, or otherwise; *aunque*, although, except, excepting; as for example, *serve al rey, y sino seràs castigado*, serve the king, or otherwise you will be chastised; *aunque sea rico, es avàro*, though he is rich, he is covetous; *no harè nada de todo esso, excepto el ir à la iglesia*, I will do nothing of all that, except the going to church; *harè todo quanto*

me pide, excepto dezir mentira, I will do whatsoever you ask me, except the telling a lye.

De las condicionales, *The conditionals;*

Which are the following; *si*, if; *dado que, puesto que*, supposing that, on condition; *con tal*, in case; as, *si peleara, lograria la victoria*, if you fight, you will gain the victory; *puesto que, dado que el rey me mande, te obedecere*, supposing that, on condition that the king commands me, I shall, I will obey him; *los Franceses seran derrotados, con tal que los Ingleses tomen las armas*, the French will be beat, in case the English take up arms.

Del as de duda, *Conjunctions of doubting;*

As, *si*, if, whether, whether or no; *a saver*, it is to be known; *sea como fuere*, be it as it will, however things go. Examples, *si barà lo que dixo a no*, whether or no he will do what he said; *no se si irè mañana*, I do not know whether I shall go to-morrow or not; *sea como fuere, irè à Roma*, be it as it will, I will go to Rome.

De las declarativas,

The declaratives, or conjunctions of declaration,

Are the following: *es de saber*, to wit; *como*, as; *por exemplo, verbi gracia*, for example; *es a dezir*, that is to say; as, *muchas partes de oracion componen un discurso, es de saber, el nombre, pronombre, &c.* several parts of speech compose a discourse, to wit, noun, pronoun, &c. *la Inglaterra es abastecida de todo, es de saber, trigo, carne, &c.*

228 The Spanish Grammar.

England is well stored with every thing, to wit, corn, flesh, &c. *este mercader tiene toda mercaderia, como paños, sedas, &c.* this merchant has all sorts of merchandize, as cloths, silks, &c. *el Señor Newton es muy docto, por exemplo, or verbi gracia, sabe la historia general, la matbematica, la filosofia, &c.* Sir Isaac Newton is very learned, for example, he is a general historian, mathematician, philosopher, &c. *la luz de la gracia, es a dezir, la vision de Dios,* the light of grace, that is to say, the vision of God.

De las interrogativas, The interrogatives.

Interrogating conjunctions are the following: *paraque*, to what end or purpose, wherefore, why, on what account? *à que*, to what end or purpose? *por que*, why, for what? *as*, *paraque venistè à mi casa?* to what end came you to my house? *a que sirve todo lo que dize?* to what purpose is all you say? *porque raxon dixistes tantas mentiras?* for what reason, why have you told so many lyes?

De las comparativas, Those of comparison,

Are, *como*, like; *as*, *de la misma manera*, after the same manner, in like manner; *assi*, so; *como tambien*, as well as; *no mas que*, no more than; *ni mas ni menos*, neither more nor less. Examples, *Pedro es malvado como su hermano*, Peter is as wicked as his brother; *de la misma manera que me servià le servirè*, I will serve him after the same manner he served me; *hago assi como usted hizò*, I do so as you did; *los Franceses son hombres, y los Italianos tam-*

tambien, the French are men, and so are the Italians; *soy su amigo tambien como el*, I am his friend as well as he; *el uno es docto tanto como el otro*, the one is as much a man of learning as the other; *quanto dista el cielo de la terra, ay tanta diferencia entre un hombre docto y un ignorante*, there is as great a difference between a man of learning and an ignorant man, as there is a distance between heaven and earth; *es tanto su amigo quanto qualquiera otro*, &c. he is as much your friend as any other whosoever, &c.

De las augmentativas, *Augmentatives*,

Are, *ademas que, tantoque*, besides, over and above; *aun*, even more, even beyond; *ademas que es embustero, es ladron*, besides his being a lyar (an impostor) he is a thief; *es valiente, aun mas de lo que se dize*, he is brave, even beyond what is reported, &c.

De las diminutivas, *The diminutives*.

The conjunctions called diminutives, are, *à lo menos, por lo menos*, at least; *siquiera*, however; as, *si no me ayuda, por lo menos no empida los otros à que lo hagan*, if you do not assist me, however at least do not hinder others from doing it; *si no me puede pagar el todo, à lo menos pagueme en parte*, if you cannot pay me the whole, pay me at least in part.

De las causales, *Causals*.

Porque, because; *porquanto*, forasmuch; *como*, as. Examples, *no te puedo ayudàr, porque soy pobre*, I cannot

I cannot assist thee, because I am poor; *como el demonio sea malo, a menester ser vigilante*, as the devil is evil, wicked, we ought to be vigilant; *porquánto me as servido fielmente, te quiero recompensar*, forasmuch, inasmuch as you have served me faithfully, I will reward you.

De las ilativas, *Illatives.*

Luego, pues, therefore; *el hombre es criatura, luego es mortal*, man is a creature, therefore mortal; *baze locuras, pues es loco*, you commit follies, therefore are a fool.

Como las conjunciones de tiempo, de orden, y de transacion, no sean diferentes de las arriba mencionadas, para evitar prolixidad, no las menciono, conjunctions of time, of order, of transaction, are no way differing from the above: as they are distinguishable by the meanest capacity, I shall, to avoid prolixity, pass them by in silence.

De las interjecciones, *Of the interjections.*

THE interjection is a part of speech which declares the passions of the mind; and as there are three passions, one of joy, one of grief, one of admiration, so there are three sorts of interjections, by which we demonstrate these different affections of the mind. The interjections of grief speak our affliction; as, *ba, ah! oy, alas! ha, ha, ah, ah! bueno, anda, mira, &c.* as, *ba miserable de mi, ah wretch that I am! oy desdichado de mi, alas! unhappy that I am! ha, ha, y que hare, ah, ah, and what course shall I take!*

Those

Those of joy, which speak our satisfaction, and serve also to express our astonishment, are, O, *bueno, muy bien, valgame Dios*, good, well, mighty good, God be with us! O, *y que alegria*, O what joy! *valgame Dios, quan dichoso eres*, good God, how happy are you (how fortunate)!

La sintaxis, *The syntax.*

WHAT the Greeks call syntax, is nothing but a just disposition of the parts of speech. This construction is divided into regular and irregular, or figurative. The regular is that which we have in common discourse: we are taught to speak grammatically by conversation, and when any speak contrary to the rules of grammar, we are shocked at it, though perhaps altogether ignorant of grammar, and can give no reason for our dislike: for example, there is hardly a peasant, who would not find fault with my saying, *I has seen London*, though he were not able to shew the solecism. The irregular or figurative deviates somewhat from the common dialect, and is used by authors either for conciseness or elegance. There are three things in the syntax to be carefully observed, which is the concord or agreement of the different parts; as, the adjective must always agree with the substantive, viz. *hombre bueno*, a good man; and not *hombre buena*; the relative with the antecedent, as, *cuyos cavallos*, whose horses, and not *cuyas cavallos*; and the nominative with the verb, as, *yo amo*, I love,

love, and not *yo amas*. I shall not trouble the reader with a long discourse, by making a general distribution of the whole syntax, but shall endeavour in the following to establish such infallible rules, that the English and the Spaniards (for whom I have undertaken the present grammar) may become masters of the Spanish and English, both with ease and pleasure. I shall begin with remarks on the

Del articulo definido, *Definite article.*

Though I have already, in the beginning of this work, said something of the articles, yet, that nothing may be wanting to render them thoroughly intelligible, I have established the following rules.

1. When any person or thing is specified, particularly pointed out and determined, the definite article must precede such noun; as, *el rey manda à sus subditos*, the king commands his subjects; *la princesa es una dama muy hermosa*, the princess is a very beautiful lady; *el principe es un general muy valiente*, the prince is a very brave general; each of which examples refer to a determined and individual subject; the article must consequently be determined or definite.

2. The article also specifies when the noun is applicable to the whole species; as, *las mugeres son fragiles*, women are weak; *el hombre es racional*, man is reasonable; *el leon es feroz*, a lion is fierce: where it is visible, that the article *las* and *el* have a defined and specified sense, since the former takes in all the female sex, and what is said of *la* may in like manner be understood of the latter *el*.

3. The

3. The article definite is also used with nouns common (what these are, as also a noun proper, we have already shewn); Ex. *el cavallo del rey*, the king's horse; *la muger del general*, the general's lady: and sometimes the definite article, by way of elegance, is placed before a noun proper; as, *el Cæsar passò à España*, Cæsar went into Spain; *el Alexandro conquistò todo el mundo*, Alexander conquered the whole world. For here the article *el* gives an emphasis to the phrase, like the pronoun *ille* in Latin; as, *ille Cæsar*, *ille Alexander*.

4. The definite article is ever put before God, when the word *Dios* has any attribute joined to it; as, *el Dios de misericordia*, the God of mercy; *el Dios de los exercitos*, the God of hosts.

5. Beside the examples I have given, which prove, that on occasion the definite article may precede a noun proper, you must now learn, that it is also sometimes used by way of imitation, as in mentioning Italian names, *el Dante*, *el Boracio*, *el Petrarca*, *el Tasso*, *el Ariosto*, *el Siciano*; and sometimes by corruption, speaking contrary to the common manner, that is, when we speak of a woman, and call her either by her christian name, or distinguish her by her title; as, *mi señora la princesa de Gales*, my lady the princess of Wales; to use it simply, as to say, *la princesa de Gales*, would be speaking contemptuously.

Custom has introduced an elegance concerning this article definite, which is, that the Spaniards, speaking of kingdoms and provinces, make use of this article in the nominative; as, *la Italia*, Italy; *la Francia*, France; *la Inglaterra*, England; *la China*, China; *el Perú*, Peru; *el Mexico*, Mexico. Though there are some names of kingdoms which do

not take the article; as, *España*, Spain; *Africa*, Africa; *Portugal*, Portugal; *Candia*, Candia.

Though by the general rule the indefinite article ought to be put before nouns proper of castles and cities, yet are there some which require the definite article; as, *el Cayro*, Cairo in Egypt; there are some nouns which in the genitive indifferently take the definite or indefinite; as, *el agua del rio*, the water of the river; *pescado de rio*, river-fish; *agua del mar*, sea-water; *pescado de mar*, sea-fish; *vino de España*, Spanish wine; *los limites de la España*, the confines of Spain; *cerveza de Inglaterra*, English ale; *los terminos de la Inglaterra*, the borders of England.

When we speak of the nobility of any country, the indefinite article is made use of before the genitive; as, *la nobleza de Inglaterra*, of *Alemania*, of *Italia*, the nobility of England, of Germany, of Italy, &c. But speaking of their prerogatives or qualities, to some the definite, to others the indefinite article is joined; as, *la nobleza de la Francia es muy avàra*, the nobility of France is extreme covetous; *la nobleza de Inglaterra es muy generosa*, the English nobility is very generous; *la nobleza de España es muy antigua*, *la nobleza de la America muy moderna*, the Spanish nobility is very ancient, the nobility of America very modern.

The particular names of every created thing demand the definite article; as, *el universo*, the universe; *el cielo*, heaven; *la tierra*, the earth; *el mar*, the sea; *el agua*, the water; *el fuègo*, fire; *el viento*, the wind; *el verano*, *el estio*, the summer; *el invièrno*, winter; *el otoño*, autumn; *el sol*, the sun; *la luna*, the moon; and they are declined with this article throughout all the cases;
 25. Nom.

Nom. *el universo*, the universe.

Gen. *del universo*, of the universe.

Dat. *al universo*, to the universe, &c. In like manner are all the rest declined.

The names of rivers and mountains require the definite article in every case; as, *el ebro rio caudaloso de España*, a large river in Spain; *el Tajo, rio caudaloso de España, que se descarga mas abaxo de Lisboa en el mar Atlantico*, the Tagus, a principal river in Spain, which discharges itself into the Atlantic sea below Lisbon; *el Tamis, el mas famoso rio de Inglaterra*, the most famous river of all England, *el Tamis*, or *la Tamise*; *el Tibre, rio caudaloso de Italia*, the Tiber, a principal river of Italy; *el Reno, uno de los mas celebres rios de Europa en Alemània*, the Rhine, one of the most celebrated rivers of all Europe. For mountains, *los Pireneos*, the Pyreneans; *los Alpes*, the Alps; *el Tauro*, mount Taurus.

Take notice that the Spaniards, speaking of rivers, most commonly reject the article in the nominative case. Example, *Ebro, Tajo, Tamis, Tibre, Reno*. But the article must always precede the accusative; as, *passe el Ebro*, I passed the Elbe; *passe el Tajo*, I passed the Tagus; *passe el Tamis*, I passed or went over the Thames.

When the word *rio* precedes, no article is used, but the Spaniards and English have the same idiom; as, *el rio Tajo*, the river Tagus; *el rio Tamis*, the river Thames; *el rio Tiber*, the river Tiber: the same thing is to be understood of mountains, as mount Taurus, *el monte Tauro*, &c.

This article is never to be put before nouns numeral, but when the period is in a defined sense;
as,

as, *los doce meses del año*, the twelve months of the year; *los doce apóstoles*, the twelve apostles; *los quatro hombres que veo son Ingleses*, the four men I see are English, &c.

The definite article is put before the days of the week, and the months of the year; as, *el Jueves Santo*, Holy Thursday; *el mes de Julio*, the month of July; *el mes de Mayo*, the month of May, &c. Nouns of quantity and quality require the definite article; as, *las grandes virtudes de usted merecen mayores premios*, your extraordinary accomplishments demand a better recompence; *el mal parage en que se alla la España con el gobierno Italiano y Frances, me haze juzgar que los Españòles son locos, por nosacudir el vicio Frances, y el engaño Italiano*, the ill condition in which Spain finds herself by the Italian and French policy, makes me think the Spaniards mad, that they do not shake off the vice of the French, and fraud of the Italians.

The definite article is put before any epithet; as, *Judas el traidor*, the traitor Judas; *don Pedro el cruel*, the cruel don Peter; *el magnanimo rey Jorge*, the magnanimous king George; *el docto Covarrubias*, the learned Covarrubias; *la inconsolable Artemisa*, the inconsolable Artemisa; *el intrepido duque de Marlbrò*, the intrepid duke of Marlborough, &c.

The superlative degree has relation to the noun which follows it, and with which (if it is a noun proper) it requires the definite article; as, *el principe Eugenio es el mejor general de todos*, prince Eugene is the best of generals; *Juan es el peor de todos*, John is the worst of all; *los menos atrevidos son los Españòles*, the Spaniards are the least resolute.

When

When the pronouns possessive *mio, tuyo, suyo, nuestro, vuestro*, mine, thine, his, our, yours, import relation, they have the definite article; as, *es tu enemigo, y el mio tambien*, he is thy enemy, and mine also; *mi casa y la tuya son paradas*, thy house and mine join; *mi hermana y la suya son amigas*, my sister and his are friends.

Pronouns improper, when they are relatives, as, *uno, otro, qual*, one, other, which, require the definite article. Examples, *el uno es mas sabio que el otro*, the one is wiser than the other; *el uno es bueno, y el otro es malo*, the one is good, the other bad; *el uno de los dos es culpado*, one of those two is blamed.

When participles are taken for substantives, they demand the definite article; as, *el desafiado se muere*, he who is given over by the doctors is a dying; *el mal tratado siempre se quiere vengar*, he who is ill used always desires to revenge himself; *el ofendido se quexa*, he who is hurt or aggrieved bemoans himself.

Sometimes adverbs, that is, when they are used as substantives, require the definite article; as, *yo harè lo mejor que pudièr*, I will do the best I can; *lo menos que fuèrè possible*, the least possible; *digas quando vendràs à mi casa, y como vendràs*. No le puedo dezir ni el quàndo ni el còmo, tell me when and how you will come to my house. I can neither tell you when, nor how.

Adverbs of modification have the definite article in the comparative, with the particles *mas* or *menos*; as, *Pedro vive lo mas santamente que pùede*, Peter leads the most holy life he can; *habla lo menos que le fuèrè possible, y le tendràn por bmbre*

bombre de entendimiento, talk as little as possible, and you will pass for a man of judgment.

These observations being made, which are infallibly right, according to the construction and elegance of the *Castilian* language, I shall treat now of the indefinite article, and shew what the Spanish requires, and the usage of the best authors of that nation.

Del articulo indefinido, *Of the indefinite article.*

Nouns common, when employed in an undetermined sense, and one substantive precedes another, require the indefinite article; as, *los Ingleses son gente de merito*, the English are a people of worth; *los Alemanes son faltos de politica*, the Germans are void of policy; *su enfermedad es de cuidado*, your illness is the effect of care; *los cavállos de España son muy ligeros*, the Spanish horses are very swift, nimble, light.

The indefinite article always follows a noun substantive of quantity, when it governs a genitive case; as, *la muchedumbre de soldados hazen fuerte un exercito*, the multitude of soldiers is the strength of an army; *y no la muchedumbre de hombres*, and not the multitude of men; *España tiene abundancia de vino*, *y con todo no ay Borrachos*, Spain abounds in wine, yet are there no drunkards; *el Sueco con un corto numero de soldados ganó muchas provincias*, the Swede with a small number of men conquered many provinces; *la Francia tiene penuria de trigo*, France is but poorly stocked with wheat, &c.

There are several nouns which have neither article, some which require the definite, and others again which have the indefinite.

Those

Those which require no article.

Remark, that when a substantive is accompanied with the sign of the dative or ablative case, and has no adjective joined to it, no article is required.

Ex. *servir con ardor*, to serve with warmth; *obrar por justicia*, to employ one's self for the sake of justice; *trabajar por interes*, to work for interest; *hablar sin razon*, to speak without reason; *estar sin socorro*, to be without help; *andar por tierra o en tierra*, to go by land.

Those which require the definite article.

Note, When the manner or place is defined, you must employ the definite article; as, *servir el rey con la fidelidad possible*, to serve the king with all possible fidelity; *servir con el ardor devido*, to serve with that zeal our duty requires; *vivir en la tierra santa es bueno*, it is good to live in the holy land; *no buviera hecho esto sin la razon que tenia de hazerlo*, I would not have done this, without the reason I had to do it.

Exemplos de los que requieren el articulo indefinido,

Example of those which require the indefinite article.

The cause or manner requires this article; as, *muero de hambre*, I die with hunger; and where a noun follows another which is governed by some verb in the period; as, *yo dare la mano a tus negocios*, I will lend a hand to your business, &c. Also when two substantives come together; as, *hombre de honra*, a man of honour; *cavallo de casta*, a bred horse; *casa de piedra*, a stone house; *muger de virtud*, a woman of virtue; *yo interrumpire el curso de su negocio*, I will interrupt the course of your affairs, &c.

As

As the Spaniards have a lofty way of expressing themselves in the mentioning of mountains, I intend to produce some examples, which will evince both the elegance and delicacy of the language.

1. When the name follows the noun *mountain*, the indefinite article is to be made use of; as, *las montañas de Burgos*, the mountains of Burgos; *las montañas de Sicilia*, the mountains of Sicily; *las montañas de Corsega*, the mountains of Corsica, &c.

2. When the name of the mountain is put adjectively, you must use the definite article; as, *los montes Pireneos*, the Pyrenean mountains; *los montes Apenninos*, the Apennine mountains: and when *monte* and not *montaña*, precedes the name; as, *el monte Olimpo*, mount Olympus; *el monte Sinai*, mount Sinai, &c. in which you need no other guide than the English idiom, which exactly corresponds with the Spanish in this point.

There are some pronouns which have the article in some cases, and in others not, *viz.* the following, *mi*, *tu*, *su*, *nuestro*, *vuestro*, which never have the article with the nominative case, either in the singular or plural number; and in speaking of things inanimate, they have no article in the accusative; in all other cases they have either the definite or indefinite, as the phrase may require. Ex. *mi sombrero*, my hat; *tu libro*, thy book; *su espada*, his sword; *nuestro padre*, our father; *vuestra madre*, your mother; *su tío*, his uncle; *la forma de mi sombrero*, the shape of my hat; *la encuadernacion de mi libro*, the binding of my book; *la bayna de su espada*, the scabbard of his sword, &c. in all which examples you see the indefinite article is used according to the preceding rule, *viz.* of

two substantives coming together. Where this article is used in the genitive, it is also used in the other cases; again, where the verb governs a dative of the person, you must employ the indefinite article; *obedecèr à mi padre, escrivir à tu madre, bablàr à su tío*, to obey my father, to write to thy mother, to speak to his uncle, &c.

Observe, that *mio, tuyo, suyo*, mine, thine, his, being put for *mi, tu, su*, they require the definite article; as, *este sombrero es el mio*, this hat is mine; *este libro es el tuyo*, this book is thine; *esta espada es la suya*, this sword is his.

Take notice, that the pronouns *este, que*, and *aquel*, follow the rule of the pronouns *mi, tu, su*; except the pronoun *que*, when used as an interrogative, or an exclamative; as, *que es esso?* what is that? *que hombre es este?* what man is that? *O Dios, que hombre malvado!* O God, what a wicked man! *O Dios, que maldad!* O God, what wickedness! *O que biziste!* O what hast thou done!

The nouns of time, that is, of days or nights, sometimes are without, and sometimes have the article, either definite or indefinite: these, being tied to no certain rule, must be left to observation. I shall set down some examples of both; *vino Domingo*, he came on Sunday; *llegò el Lunex*, he arrived on Monday; *vendrè Lunex*, I will come on Monday; *llegò esta noche*, he arrived this night; *vino el Domingo*, he came on Sunday; *llegò à la noche*, he came at night; *partiò à la mañana ò de mañana*, he went away early; *le verè un dia de esta semana*, I shall see him some day this week; *el dia de Domingo serà fiesta*, Sunday will be holy-day.

242 *The Spanish Grammar.*

These are the most necessary, and the most remarkable observations on the articles: there remains nothing more, than to speak of the order they must observe in construction, that you may speak and write with elegance.

The articles, whether definite or indefinite, are always placed before the noun substantive; as, *desear la salud à su enemigo es de Cristiano*, to wish well to our enemies is the part of a Christian; *me alegro que la paz esté establecida entre el Turco y el emperador*, I am glad the peace is concluded between the Turk and the emperor; *vencer à los enemigos es cosa provechosa*, it is an advantage to get the better of our enemies; *el reyno de la Francia es mas grande que el de Inglaterra*, the kingdom of France is of a greater extent than that of England; *la ciudad de Londres es la mas rica de Europa*, the city of London is the richest of all Europe.

When the substantive and adjective are joined in a period, one article (which is sometimes put before the substantive, and sometimes before the adjective) serves for both; as, *el hombre Cristiano no murmura de su proximo*, a Christian does not envy his neighbour; *el hombre docto no haze caso del ignorante*, a man of learning has no esteem for the ignorant; *la muger virtuosa no es parlera*, a virtuous woman is no babbler; *el soldado valiente no cede à su enemigo*, a brave soldier does not yield to his enemy; *el docto Covarrubias compuso un excelente dictionario*, the learned Covarrubias composed an excellent dictionary; *el Gran Alexandro conquistò todo el mundo*, Alexander the Great conquered the whole world; *el grande Turco es muy rico*, the great Turk is very rich.

To

To the end that I may leave nothing obscure, and that those who are not thoroughly acquainted with the Latin, may meet with no difficulties, I would have them take notice of the following rules.

1. When a substantive or verb follows immediately the adjective *todo*, all; then the indefinite article precedes the adjective *todo*, all; as, *el mejor de todos los generales fuè el duque de Marlbrò*, the duke of Marlborough was the greatest of generals; *lo mejòr de todo, es servir à Dios*, the best of all is to serve God; *escribirè à todos los reyes de Europa*, I will write to all the crowned heads in Europe; *la Francia no pudo resistèr à todo el podèr de los aliàdos*, France could not resist the whole force of the allies. But when the substantive is in the nominative case, the adjective *todo*, all, requires no article; as, *todo el mundo sabe que la Francia no tiene su palàbra*, all the world knows that France does not keep her word; *todo lo dicho no sirve para nada*, all that serves for nothing, is to no purpose; *todo el poder de Francia consiste en*, &c. the whole power of France consists in, &c.

2. When a noun adjective, which gives the epithet, follows immediately its substantive, and the said substantive is in the genitive case by the rule of two substantives coming together, then the adjective shall have the definite article; and the substantive, as a noun proper, shall have the indefinite before it; as, *la prudencia de Alexandro el Grande fue singular*, Alexander the Great was of singular prudence; *la magnanimidad de don Alonso el Sabio fuè unica*, the magnanimity of Alonso the Wise was not to be matched; *la politica de Felipe el Grande*, the policy of Philip the Great, &c.

244 The Spanish Grammar.

When the verb substantive separates the adjective from the substantive, no article is requisite; as, *Ciceron fue elegante*, Cicero was elegant; *Oracio fue docto*, Horace was learned; *Dios es omnipotente*, God is omnipotent; *el hombre es prudente, si se gobierna segun la raxon*, man is prudent, if he guides himself by reason. And it is the same thing, if the verb is understood; as, *Ciceron fue elegante*, & *Oracio docto*. But when the adjective is taken substantively, it must then have the definite article; as, *lo bueno es amable*, what is good and amiable; *lo malo es aborrecible*, that which is wicked is detestable; *el cobarde no puede competir con el animoso*, the coward cannot come in competition with the brave; *lo bueno està confundido con lo malo*, good is confounded with evil; *lo dicho basta para que el sabio se guarde del malvado*, what has been said is sufficient to set the wise man on his guard against the wicked.

De la concordancia y uso de los nombres.

Of the concordance and use of nouns.

As nouns are the first reckoned in the parts of speech, therefore I shall begin with them, and explain what is necessary to be known in syntax.

It is a general rule, both in the Latin and Spanish, that the adjective must ever agree with its substantive in gender, number, and case, without any exception; as, *hombre bueno*, *hombre malo*, a good, a bad man; *muger perfecta*, *muger imperfecta*, a woman without, a woman not without faults; *hombres arrogantes*, arrogant men; *mugeres indiscretas*, indiscreet women. By which ex-
amples

amples it appears, that the substantive and adjective agree in gender, number, and case, as has been said in former observations.

As none have hitherto given rules for the clearing up the difficulty found in the order and disposition of nouns, which is no small one, I shall establish some, which I have made from my remarks on the best Spanish authors, and I hope they will be allowed such as may be relied on as infallible. First, participles, as adjectives, follow the substantive; as, *un hombre perdido*, an undone or lost man; *una iglesia derribada*, a demolished church; *una casa abandonada*, an abandoned house; *una ciudad sitiada*, a besieged city; *un general triunfante*, a triumphing general; *un rey vencido*, a conquered king; *una casa limpiada*, a cleaned house, &c.

Names of colour, or nouns signifying colour, follow the same rule; that is, come after the substantive; as, *blanco*, white; *negro*, black; *colorado*, coloured; *verde*, green; *amarillo*, pale; *azul*, blue; *rojo*, red; *ceniciento*, colour of cinders. Ex. *un hombre blanco*, a fair man, also a man without spot or stain on his reputation; *una mugèr negra*, a black woman; *un vestido colorado*, a coloured suit; *unas medias verdes*, a pair of green stockings; *una chupa amarilla*, a pale-coloured waistcoat; *un guarda pies azul*, a blue under-petticoat; *una cinta roja*, a red ribband; *una capa cenicienta* a cinder-coloured cloak.

The qualities of the elements follow the same rule; as, *caliente*, hot; *frio*, cold; *seco*, dry; *humedo*, humid; *templado*, temperate; *tibio*, lukewarm. Ex. *agua tibia*, warm water; *tiempo caliente*, hot weather; *tiempo frio*, cold weather; *leña seca*, dry wood; *quarto humedo*, a damp apartment; *ayre templado*, a temperate air.

246 The Spanish Grammar.

The same rule serves for the nouns of measure; as, *largo* long, *corto* short, *ancho* wide, *estrecho* narrow, *alto* high, *profundo* deep. Ex. *un vestido largo*, a long garment; *una capa corta*, a short cloak; *unos zapatos anchos*, wide shoes; *un jubon estrecho*, a strait doublet; *una torre alta*, an high tower; *una cima profunda*, a deep pit. It is needless to give any more examples, or distinguish them under different heads. There are some however which come before the substantive as well as after, but then it is either in the comparative or superlative degree, or else there is some particle which goes before it, as the pronoun *el*, he; *este*, this; &c. the noun numeral *un*, one, or an interjection; as, *Maria es una agradable muger*, *es muy agradable muger* Maria, Mary is an agreeable woman, Mary is a very agreeable woman; *este hombre es bueno*, *es muy bueno este hombre*, this is a good man, this man is a very good man; *el principe de Gales es bizarro*, *O que bizarro principe!* the prince of Wales is a fine prince, O how fine a prince! *esta muger es fea*, *es muy fea esta muger*, this woman is homely, this woman is very homely; *esta casa es muy grande*, *es muy grande esta casa*, this house is large, this house is very large; *es una joven muger*, she is a young woman; *es una muger muy joven*, she is a very young woman; *la princesa de Gales es una linda princesa*, the princess of Wales is a fine princess; *la princesa Ana es muy linda*, the princess Ann is very beautiful; *es un pobre hombre*, *es un hombre muy pobre*, he is a poor man, he is a very poor man; *es muy poderoso el rey de Inglaterra*, *el rey de Inglaterra es muy poderoso*, the king of England is very potent.

Remarks on adjectives comparatives, which signify likeness or unlikeness, difference or conformity;

Which are the following: *igual*, *desigual*, *semejante*, *conforme*, *diferente*. *Todos los hombres son iguales à los angeles discurrièdo*, all men by thought are equal to angels; *los Franceses son desiguales en costumbres à los Españoles*, the French are unlike the Spaniards in their customs; *un hombre es semejante à un otro*, one man is like another; *Pedro se semeja à su hermano*, Peter is like his brother; *lo que vuestra merced dize se conforma con la verdad*, what you say is conformable to the truth; *este vino es diferente del otro*, this wine is different from the other. By which examples you may remark, that these adjectives have the same regimen as they have in English.

I shall now speak of the comparatives, which are taken from the Latin; and then proceed to those which are compounded with the adverbs *mas*, more; and *menos*, less. The first are these following; where you will observe, that the force of the comparison lies in the particle *que*, what; as indeed it does in all languages; the Latin has *quam*, the French *plus*, the English *than*, the Italian *di*, and the Spanish *que*; *mejor*, *peor*, *pequeño*, little; *menor*, less. Example, *el vino es mejor que la cerbeza*, wine is better than beer; *la peste es peor que la sarna*, the plague is worse than the itch; *la parte es menor que el todo*, a part is less than the whole.

I said I would mention the compound comparatives. Now observe, that you make comparison with these adverbs, *mas*, better or more; and *menos*, less; as, *mi cavallo es mas bueno que el tuyo*, my horse is better than yours; *mi casa es mas hermosa que la*

248 *The Spanish Grammar.*

tuya, my house is finer than yours ; *mi criado es mas vigilante que el tuyo*, my servant is more vigilant than yours ; *Pedro es menos docto que Juan*, Peter is less learned than John.

De los superlativos, *The superlatives.*

As we have already defined what is meant by the word superlative, which is commonly esteemed the greatest excess, we shall not trouble the reader with repetitions. It is formed as in Latin (from whence the Spanish language takes its rise); for as in Latin the superlative is formed by adding *ssimus* to the case which ends in *i*; as, *amans*, Gen. *amantis*, Dat. *amanti*, *amantissimus*; so in Spanish it is formed by changing the final vowel into *i*, and adding *ssimo*; as, *ilustre*, *ilustrissimo*, illustrious, most illustrious; *reverendo*, *reverendissimo*, reverend, most reverend. But of superlatives some mark an excess without relation, others an excess with relation, to some other thing: for the first sort we use the particle *muy*, very; as, *el rey Jorge es un principe muy sabio*, king George is a very wise prince; *el principe de Gales es un principe muy discreto*, the prince of Wales is a very discreet prince; *el cavallero Newton es un hombre muy sientifico*, sir Isaac Newton is a very learned man; *la princesa de Gales es una princesa muy linda*, the princess of Wales is a very beautiful princess. Here is no relation (*muy* in Spanish answers to the particle *very* in English). When there is relation, you may form the superlative, by putting the pronoun *el* before the sign of the comparative degree *mas*; as, *el rey Jorge es un principe el mas sabio del mundo*, king George is the wisest prince of the whole world;

world; *el principe de Gales es un principe el mas discreto de todos*, the prince of Wales is the most discreet of all princes; *el cavallero Newton es el mas fientifico de Inglaterra*, sir Isaac Newton is the most learned man in England; *la princesa de Gales es la princesa la mas linda del mundo*, the princess of Wales is the most beautiful princess in the world.

There are other nouns adjective, which without the adverbs *mas* or *muy*, by being put before a genitive of the same signification, give us the idea of an excess; as, *el santo de los santos*, &c. the holy of holies, &c. There are also nouns substantive which include within themselves the force of the superlative after the same manner; as, *el vino de los vinos*, the wine of wines; *el cavallo de cavillos*, the horse of horses; *ingenio de ingenios*, wit of wits, &c.

Observaciones de los nombres numerales.

Observations on the nouns of number.

I have in the beginning of this grammar said something of the nouns of number: I shall make the use of them easy, which many have thought so, from their not being thoroughly acquainted with the Spanish language, and the elegancy of its idioms.

We must first take notice, that these nouns are distributed into five classes: the first is what we call cardinal or principal; as, *uno, dos, tres, veynte, treinta, quarenta, cinquenta, cien, mil*, &c. one, two, three, twenty, thirty, forty, fifty, an hundred, a thousand, &c.

Those of the second are called ordinals; as, *primero, segundo, tercero, quarto, dezimo, undezimo,*
vi-

vigésimo, trigésimo, quadragésimo, quinquagésimo, centésimo, milésimo, the first, the second, the third, the fourth, the tenth, the eleventh, the twentieth, the thirtieth, the fortieth, the fiftieth, the hundredth, the thousandth, &c.

The third class contains the collectives; as, *una docena, una quinzena, una veintena, una treintena*, &c. a dozen: we go no farther in English with the collectives; but say *twenty, thirty*, &c. making use of the cardinals.

The fourth class are the nouns of distribution; as, *el quinto*, the fifth, &c.

Nouns of number, which mark augmentation, are in the fifth class; as, *lo doble, lo triple, lo quadruple*, the double, the triple, the quadruple, &c.

Though all nouns of number are adjectives in their nature (for of themselves they cannot make a sense complete); yet there are some which do not vary their termination, that is to say, from one, *uno*, which has *una* in the feminine, and *unos, unas* in the plural, signifying *some*; to two hundred, *dozientos*, which again has the feminine termination; as, *dozientas mugeres*, two hundred women; *dozientos soldados*, two hundred soldiers. But that I may make the numbers familiar to the reader, I shall give an example of each of the five classes. For the first take the following; *un hombre vino à mi casa*, a man came to my house; *los unos son ricos, y los otros son pobres*, some are rich, and others are poor; *la una y la otra muger à sido lindo linda*, both the one and the other woman has been handsome; *unas mugeres bonradas àn visto mi casa*, some women of credit have seen my house; *llegaron dos hombres de Madrid*, two men arrived from Madrid; *cien soldados*
asal-

asaltaron la plaza, an hundred soldiers attacked the market, the place; *mil soldados ganaron la batalla*, a thousand soldiers gained a battle.

Examples of those of the second class: *el primero que fue encima de la muralla fue el Capitan*, &c. the first who appeared upon the wall was Captain, &c. *el segundo de vosotros tendrà el premio*, the second of ye shall have the prize; *el dèzimo perteneze à la iglesia*, the tenth belongs to the church.

Examples of the third class: *una dozena de hombres valen mas que cien mugeres*, a dozen of men are worth an hundred women; *una vientena de manzanas es mas que una dozena*, twenty apples are more than a dozen.

Examples of the fourth class: *yo pagarè el quinto al rey*, I will pay the fifth to the king; *tu me lo pagaràs por setenas*, thou shalt pay it me sevenfold; *el sexto dia de este mès vendrè à tu casa*, I will come to your house the sixth day of this month.

Examples of the fifth class: *te pagarè lo doblàdo de tu dinèro*, I will pay thee the double of your money; *paguè lo doble*, I have paid the double; *hè satisfecho lo triple*, I have made triple satisfaction.

The Spaniards suppress the noun substantive, which the noun numeral has relation to; as, *lleguè à la ùna*, I came at one, where *hora*, hour, is understood; *à las dos*, *à las tres*, *à las quatro*, (where *horas* is understood) at one, two, three a clock. They will sometimes say, *à las tres*, *las quatro*, *las doze del dia*, at three, at four, at twelve of the day, where *horas*, hours, which answers to our word *clock*, is understood, and the article put in the feminine in respect to the suppressed substantive; *à las tres*, *à las quatro*, *à las diez de la noche*,
at

- at three, at four, at ten a clock at night. It is no fault to say, *llegué a medio día, a media noche*, I came at noon, at midnight; but it is a manner of speaking not used by the more polite sort. The same manner of suppressing the substantive is used in the days of the month, not only in speaking, but also in dating of letters; for in good Spanish
- we say, *llegué a quatro de Agosto*, I arrived the fourth of August. And in letters we write, *London, y Deziembre a veinte de 1725; Madrid, y Agosto a 10 de 1725*, London, December the 20th, 1725; Madrid, August the 10th, 1725, &c.

Of the ablative absolute.

The ablative absolute is a sentence which is independent, and would no way hinder the sense from being complete, were it not expressed. As I am treating of the nouns, I think this the properest place to take notice of this way of expression, in which the Spanish language affects very much to imitate her mother, the Latin. This phraseology being then derived from the Latin, I shall give some examples of it in both the languages. I said that the sense of a period would be complete, though this ablative absolute were taken away: Ex. *brevitatem secutus sum, te magistro*. Now, if *te magistro* should be left out, who doubts but the rest of the sentence, viz. *brevitatem secutus sum*, I have been brief, would be altogether as intelligible as with *te magistro*, after your example? *Me duce, ad hunc voti finem veni*, I obtained this my end without assistance. Suppose I leave out *me duce*, by my own management, or without assistance, would not *ad hunc voti finem veni*,

veni, I compassed this design, be intelligible? The ablative absolute is formed of a substantive and a participle, or a gerund in the Spanish; as, *docente Pedro discipulos suos, &c. enseñando Pedro à sus discipulos, &c.* Peter teaching his scholars, &c. *acabada la cena, se fuè à dormir*, supper being ended, he went to sleep; *quitada la causa, cesa el efeto*, the cause being taken away, the effect ceased. You may put the ablative absolute either at the beginning or end of a period; for it is the same thing, if you say, *batalla ganada, plaza rendida*, or *la plaza se rendiò, ganada la batalla*, the place surrendered, the battle being won; *acabado esto, todo el mundo se retirò*, this being ended, all the world withdrew. These examples are sufficient to teach the formation of the ablative absolute. I shall therefore proceed to the

Pronouns personal.

De los pronombres personales.

The pronouns having the second place allotted them in the parts of speech, I shall, as all other grammarians have done, treat of them immediately after the noun; and as the pronoun of the first person is the more worthy, I shall begin with that. You must take notice, that it has no determined gender, and is joined to either the masculine or feminine, and declined without any article, with the help only of the particle *a* and *de*, as may be seen in the following examples. There is but one pronoun of the first person, which is *yo*, I; and it always agrees with the verb in number and person; viz. *yo amo*, I love; *yo soy*, I am; *yo leo*, I read;

read; *yo canto*, I sing, &c. and it is very often suppressed in Spanish by way of elegance, and in imitation of the Latin; as, *amo à estas muchachas*, I love these girls: though in English it cannot be left out, *leo mis libros*, I read my books; *canto un soneto*, I sing a song; *conosco à este hombre*, I know this man. Sometimes it is put before nouns of quality and dignity; but then it is in a peculiar manner; as, *yo don Pedro de Avila governador*, &c. I don Peter of Avila governor, &c. *yo don Guillelmo arcobispo de Cantorberi*, I William archbishop of Canterbury. In an interrogation it is never put either before or after the verb; as, *que dirè?* what shall I say? *que escribirè?* what shall I write? *adonde estoy?* where am I? *que hago?* what do I do? *que le harè?* what shall I do for you? &c.

When the verb is inclosed in a parenthesis, the pronoun is never omitted, it giving a greater emphasis; as, *los Españoles (le digo yo) son muy profundos*, the Spaniards (it is I that say it) are men of great learning.

The pronoun *yo* is never joined to its verb, when we speak with an interjection; as, *O miserable de mi, que harè!* O wretch that I am, what course shall I take! *O desdichado de mi, que estoy perdido!* O unhappy man that I am, I am undone!

What I have said of the pronoun in the singular, must also be understood for the plural, without any exception.

Remark, that when this pronoun of the first person is governed by the preposition *con*, it always takes to it the syllable *go*: it is the same in the pronouns of the second and third persons; as, *mi padre vendrà con migo*, my father will come along with me;

el quiere ir à pasearse contigo, he will go to take a walk with you; *irè contigo à Londres*, I will go along with you to London; *iràs conmigo à España*, you shall go with me to Spain; *hàbla con figo*, he speaks to himself.

I make no particular mention of the pronoun of the second person; as the rules I have given for that of the first, serve also for the second without any difference.

Pronoun of the third person.

I have said, that the pronoun of the first person was indifferently put before either the masculine or feminine gender; and that the pronoun of the second person followed the same rules as that of the first: but it is not the same thing in respect of the pronoun of the third person; for that cannot be put indifferently before either gender, having *el* for the singular of the masculine, and *ella* for that of the feminine gender: in the plural masculine it makes *ellos*, and *ellas* for the plural feminine.

Remark, that all the pronouns, whether of the first, second, or third person, imitate the Latin construction; as, *ego lego, & tu scribis, yo leo, y tu escribes*: but the Spaniards take it for an affront to be treated with the second person *tu*, and it is looked upon as a contempt, unless it is from a father to a son, a master to his servant, &c. for which reason, instead of the second they use the third person; as, *usted escribe*, you write; as I have already hinted in the beginning of this grammar.

The Spaniards often speak impersonally; as, *dizen haver ganado la batalla el duque de Marlbrò*, it is said the duke of Marlborough gained the battle; *se dize publicamente que el rey de Francia embiò la*
in-

256 *The Spanish Grammar.*

infanta à España, it is publickly said, that the king of France sent the infanta to Spain. If the learner will but remark this manner of speaking impersonally, which agrees with the English idiom, it will render a great many difficulties to beginners easy, in Spanish and in English.

De los pronombres posesivos.

Pronouns possessive.

I have said in the beginning of this grammar, that there are three pronouns possessive (for I speak of those which are not relatives); which are the following, *mi, tu, su*, in the singular; *mis, tus, sus*, in the plural.

Note, that these pronouns possessive are always made use of with a substantive both in the singular and plural, and are indifferently put before a substantive of either gender; as, *deme mi libro*, give me my book; *mande à su criado*, command thy servant; *obedezca à su maestro*, obey your master; *llevame mis medias*, bring me my stockings; *conservè sus amigos*, keep your friends; *desprecie sus avisos*, I despised your advice, &c. I need say no more on these pronouns; for I believe no difficulty can arise to those who will take notice of the rules here given.

De los posesivos relativos.

Of the possessive relative.

Those who are strangers to the Spanish language, often confound this pronoun relative with the foregoing: to avoid which inconveniency, you need only carefully remark the following rules.

The

The pronouns which are not relative, viz. *mi, tu, su, mis, tus, sus*, I have above said, are indifferently put before either gender; as, *mi padre, mi madre, tu hermano, tu hermana, su tio, su tia*, my father, my mother, thy brother, thy sister, his uncle, his aunt: but it is not so with the pronoun possessive relative; for that varies its termination, and becomes feminine by changing the final *o* into *a*, as *mia, tuya, suya, mia, tuya, suya*: and it makes the plural by adding an *s*, *mios, mias, tuyos, tuyas, suyos, suyas*; so that they are of the nature of adjectives.

Remark, that *mi, tu, su*, form their plural like nouns by the addition of an *s*; as, *mi camisa, mis camisas*, my shirt, my shirts; but *mio, tuo, suyo*, make their plural, not only by adding an *s*; as, *este cavalla es mio*, this horse is mine; *estos cavállos son mios*, these horses are mine, &c. but also after the manner of the Latin; as, *meus, mea, noster, nostra, soror mea, soror nostra*, so *nuestro, vuestro, suyo, nuestra, vuestra, suya*; by which you see it has a termination for each gender.

It is needless to give any examples, it being the same as the Latin.

These pronouns have the article before them, when the conjunction copulative comes between. Example, *tu hermano y el mio*, thy brother and mine; *mi hermana y la suya*, my sister and his; *tu madre y la suya*, thy mother and his. For the plural are the following examples: *tus cavallas y los mios*, thy horses and mine; *mis casas y las tuyas*, my houses and thine; *tus camisas y las suyas*, thy shirts and his.

In these examples you may remark, that we have put the pronoun in the singular number; but when the pronoun is in the plural, you must employ *nuestro*, &c. viz. *nuestra casa y la vuestra son pare-danas*, our house and yours join; *nuestros cavállos y los vuestros son ruynes*, your horses and ours are mere jades; *vosotros queréis à vuestros amigos, y ellos à los suyos*, you love your friends, and they love theirs. When the conjunction copulative does not precede the pronoun, the article is rejected; as, *este sombrero es mio*, this hat is mine; *estas medias son mias*, these stockings are mine; *este cavállo es tuyo*, this horse is thine; *esta yegua es suya*, this mare is his, &c.

N. B. These pronouns possessive, when any thing is understood to which they refer, are put substantively, and in the neuter gender, after the example of the Latin. Example, *hoc meum est*, &c. *esto es lo mio*, this is mine; *toma lo tuyo*, take thine, or that which belongs to thee; *dame lo mio*, give me mine, or that which belongs to me; *reciba lo suyo*, let him take his; *tomad lo vuestro*, take yours; *dadnos lo nuestro*, give us ours; in the plural they only take the *s*, as has been already said.

De los pronombres demonstrativos.

Pronouns demonstrative.

As I have already given a definition, and made a division of these demonstratives, to repeat what has been said before, would be needless; I shall therefore only mention their termination, and their use in the Spanish language. Their terminations are as follow:

The

The singular masculine.

Este, esse, aquel, this, that, that there.

Plural masculine.

Estos, esos, aquellos, these, those, those yonder.

Singular feminine.

Esta, essa, aquella, this, that, that there or yonder.

Plural feminine.

Estas, essas, aquellas, these, those, those there.

Neutro, *Neuter*.

Esto, esso, aquello, this, that, that there.

I shall now go on to the use of these demonstratives in grammatical construction, to which a particular regard must be had. These pronouns either refer to persons or things, absent or present; in the latter you must make use of *este* and *esse* for the masculine, *esta* and *essa* for the feminine; *este* and *esta* answer to *this* in English, which is the person or thing nearest to us; *esse* and *essa* answer to the English *that*, which is supposed somewhat more distant; *aquel*, *aquellos*, *aquella*, *aquellas*, to *that there*, or *yonder*, which is almost out of sight, is more remote, or not in sight at all. For example, if I say, *este cavallero es un hombre bonrado*, this gentleman is a man of honour; it is visible that I speak of one who is present; as it is also if I say, *esse cavallero*, &c. though it gives us the idea of a greater distance, for *este cavallero*, that gentleman, points out a particular person, whom we have in view.

But *aquello*, *aquella*, *aquellos*, *aquellas*, has reference to a thing at a distance, or intirely out of our sight;

sight; as, *vivi largo tiempo in aquella ciudad*, I lived a long time in that city; *vivi diez años en aquellas provincias*, I lived ten years in those counties, provinces; *aquel hombre de quien me hablaste, era un virtuoso*, that man whom you spoke to me of, was a man of virtue. Some make use of *essa* instead of *aquella*; as, *aquella muger es muy hermosa, ò essa muger es muy hermosa*, that woman is very beautiful; which way of speaking is improper, and only used among the peasants; for among those who understand their language, *essa* for *aquella* is never said; as, *aquella* (and never *essa*) *muger es muy hermosa*, that woman is very handsome.

Very often *el que*, by way of elegancy, is put in the place of *aquello*, *los que* for *aquellos*, *la que* for *aquella*, and *las que* for *aquellas*, viz. *aquel hombre de quien V. M. me hablò es muy galan*, that man of whom you spoke to me is a very fine man; or *el hombre de quien me hablò es muy galan*; *aquellas que estan cerca de mi son muy lindas*, or *las que estan cerca de mi*, &c. those women who are near me are very handsome; *aquellas que viven mal son aborrecidas*, or *las que*, &c. those women who lead a wicked life are detested.

The pronouns *aquel* and *este*, speaking of things absent, become relatives, and then are taken as substantives, and are thus formed, *aquel*, *lo*, *esto*. Ex. *aquello que me dixo fuè mentira*, what he said to me (what he told me) was a lye; *esto es dudoso, y necessita confirmacion*, that is doubtful, and wants confirmation.

When the pronoun *lo* comes before the relative *que*, it becomes also a relative, and is taken substantively;

stantively; viz. *lo que me han dicho a sido verdad*, what was told me proves true; *le dirè lo que me sucediò*, I will tell you what happened to me; *dirè lo que me à dicho*, &c. I will tell you what he said to me, &c.

In some phrases the pronoun *esto* is relative, in others demonstrative; I need but give an example or two of this pronoun in each function; for the meanest capacity is sufficient to discover when it is either the one or the other. It is a mere demonstrative in the following phrases; as, *esto me parece magnifico*, this seems to me magnificent; *esto merece castigo*, this deserves punishment. It is relative in the following examples; suppose a person had given me some account of another, and I answer, *esto a sido la causa de su ruina*, this was the cause of his ruin; *esto fue à penas dicho quando vino su hermano*, this was hardly said when his brother came.

De los interrogativos, *Of the interrogatives.*

I have not much to say on these pronouns, which are *que? quien? qual? de que? de quien? à quien?* *Que, quien, qual*, are relatives, as shall be shewn hereafter. I intend to make a few necessary observations on each, which may prove an help to the scholar, and an ease to the master.

1. The pronoun *que* is indeclinable, and consequently serves for both genders, as may be seen in these examples; *què cavàllo es este?* what horse is this? *què yegua es esta?* what mare is this? *què cavàllos son estos?* *què yeguas son estas?*

2. When the *què* is accented, it is an interrogative; but when it is not an interrogative, it is not accented; and whoever writes it, without having regard

262 *The Spanish Grammar.*

gard to this rule, is either a foreigner, or an ignorant Spaniard.

3. The *que* is very often an adverb, and adds beauty and elegance to the Spanish language: that you may know when it is an adverb, take notice it is always preceded by an *a*; as, *àquè vino este hombre?* to what end came that man? in which the *àquè* answers to the Latin *cur?* *quare?* wherefore?

4. But *àquè* does not always answer to the Latin *cur?* for in the following, it has the signification of *in quo*, *qua*, *ad quod*; as, *àquè juego perdì V. M. su dinero?* at what game did you lose your money? *à què comedia fue V. M. ayer?* what playhouse was you at yesterday? *à què arte se emplea V. M.?* &c. in what art do you employ yourself? &c. Which manner of expression is very elegant.

5. Speaking of inanimates, you may use *quàl* or *quien* indifferently, which cannot be done with animates; as, *quàl de estos dos retratos es el mejor?* or *quien de estos dos*, &c. which of these two pictures is the best? But when you speak of things having life, as I have before said, you must make use of *quien* only, except you put the article before *quàl*. As for example, *quien de las dos mugeres es la mas hermosa?* which of those two women is the handsomest? or *la quàl de*, &c. Which however is a grosser way of expression, and excuseable only in the mouths of the unlearned.

De los relativos, *Of the relative.*

Though many who have published Spanish grammars, say there are ten pronouns relative in the Castilian

Castilian tongue, yet I must beg leave to dissent from them, and inform the learner there are no more than six, viz. *que*, *el qual*, *à quien*, or *de quien*, *cuyo*, and *el*. Examples: *el hombre que habla no executa*, the man who talks does not execute; *Pedro me dixo que V. M. estava enfermo, el qual se fuè luego que mi lo dixo*, Peter told me you were disordered, who went away immediately after he had told me so; *el muchàcho de quien habla es picaro*, the boy of whom you speak to me is a rascal; *servi al rey Jorge, de cuyos servicios ganè mi pan*, I served king George, by whose service I got my bread; *el me dixo que V. M. iria à Londres, &c.* he told me you would go to London, &c.

N. B. That the said pronouns, *el qual*, *de quien*, *cuyo*, and *el*, have both numbers and genders; and that *que* alone is indeclinable. Observe also, we use these pronouns both with things animate and inanimate, except *quien*, which relates only to persons; as in these examples: *un perro que muerde*, a dog which bites; *una casa que se va cayendo es peligrosa*, a falling house is dangerous; *vi à su amigo, el qual me dixo, &c.* I saw your friend, who told me, &c. *de quien es este criado?* whose servant is this? *cuyo es esse muchàcho?* whose child is that? *cuyo es esse sombrero?* whose hat is this? *el me viò en la iglesia*, he saw me in the church. These pronouns are used in both genders and numbers, as I have above said, except only the indeclinable relative *que*.

De los pronombres improprios.

Of pronouns improper.

These pronouns the Spanish language divides into two classes: the first is of personals, which re-

gard persons only ; the other of mixt, that is, which has regard both to things and persons.

The personals are the following, *quien, persona, nadie* ; the mixt are, *ninguno, cadauno, otro, cierto, mismo, nulo, alguno, todo, tal, qualquier, cadaqual*.

Of these pronouns there are some which have only one termination, and others which change their termination : the former are *quien, persona, nadie, cada, tal* ; these have, I say, only one termination, being pronouns improper, and nothing more. Of the second sort are *ninguno, otro, cadauno, cierto, mismo, nulo, alguno, todo, qualquier* ; these have the feminine termination ; as, *ninguna, otra, cadauna, cierta, misma, nula, alguna, toda, qualquiera*.

Of all which aforesaid pronouns there are three only negatives, to wit, *ninguno, nadie, nulo* ; the others are affirmatives, as may be seen in the following examples. I shall begin with examples of the negatives, which may be indifferently used one for the other ; as, *nadie hizo esso, ninguno hizo esso, nulo hizo esso*, no body did that.

Examples of the affirmatives : *alguno de la compaña robò mi capa*, some one of the company has stolen my cloak ; *cada uno cuyda de su adelantamiento*, every one looks to his own preferment ; *quien professa la virtud es digno de ser alabado*, he who makes profession of virtue is worthy of praise ; *cierto hombre me ha dicho que fue borracho la noche passada*, a certain man or person told me you were drunk last night ; *mùcho cuydado, perturba la salud*, much care ruins the health ; *cada uno se retire à su rancho*, let every one fall back into his rank ; *nula muger hará lo que Maria hizo*, no woman will do what Mary has done ; *ella misma (or el mismo)*

me dixo esto, she herself (or he himself) told me this; *alguno de ellos lo hizo*, one of them did it; *muchos intentaron à hazer gramatica por la lingua Española*, y todos erraron en algo, many have attempted to make a Spanish grammar, and all have erred in something or other; *tal me dixò, que le crei*, he said so much, I believed him; *todo lo dicho es falso*, all he said is false; *ningun hombre de bien puede dezir, que esta gramatica no es mejor que las demas*, no man of probity can say, that this grammar does not surpass all others.

De los verbos, *Of the verbs.*

To speak a language in perfection, we must not only know how to conjugate the verbs, but also to employ them rightly: the following rules, if carefully observed, will teach how to obviate all difficulties and ambiguities, and render the true Castilian language both easy and pleasant.

De los modos y tiempos.

Of the moods and tenses.

I have already, in the beginning of this grammar, said, that the indicative mood has its name from its pointing out, and shewing the thing either in the present, the perfect, or the future tense; which tenses may be employed without a preceding preposition or conjunction, though sometimes they are found with the following conjunctions, *que*, *si*, *quando*, and *cómo*. Examples: *que haze?* *que dize usted?* what do you do, or say? *si vuestra merced avia dicho esto mas presto, le uviera servido*, if you had said this sooner,

sooner, I would have served you; *como amè me amàron*, they loved me as I loved them; *no sè si partirà à no*, I do not know if he will go away or not.

Del imperativo.

Of the imperative mood.

This mood requires neither preposition nor conjunction, except only in the third person singular and plural, when the imperative is preceded by another verb: in such case the particle *que* is made use of. Ex. *quiero que hable*, I will, I desire, that he speak; *mando que se calle*, I command him to hold his tongue. I say, when the imperative mood follows another verb: but when there is not another verb before it, the *que* is not to be employed; as, *pague sus deudas*, let him pay his debts; *camine derecho*, let him walk strait; *venga à la iglesia*, let him come to church, &c.

Del modo optativo y subjuntivo,

The optative or subjunctive mood,

Has six tenses; to wit, the present, the preter-imperfect, the preterperfect, the preterpluperfect, and the first and second future. It takes its name from being subjoined to another verb, or to some particle, or from its wishing or desiring; and generally each tense requires some particle, or noun relative, though sometimes the present tense is used absolutely; as, *Dios lo baga*, God grant it. You may by the by observe, that, according to the practice of the best authors, the particle *que* may be used with all moods and tenses.

All verbs taken impersonally with the particle *que*, require the subjunctive mood; as, *es menester que vaya*, he must go; *es forzoso que venga*, he must indispensably come. But the verb can never be taken impersonally, when certainty is marked; as, *es cierto, es constante, es indubitable, que esto sea así*, it is sure, certain, not to be doubted, that this is so.

All verbs which signify ignorance, doubt, desire, admiration, supplication, or pretension, govern the subjunctive mood; as, *dudo que lo puedas bazer*, I doubt your doing it; *admiro que convenga en esso*, I wonder he agrees to that; *ruego que venga a mi casa*, I desire you to come to my house; *deseo que prospere en sus negocios*, I wish, I desire, you may succeed, prosper in your affairs; *pretendo que venga aquí*, &c. I pretend that he shall come hither, &c.

Del modo infinito, Of the infinitive mood.

As this mood has an indeterminate signification, it can be employed neither absolutely nor determinately, except in speaking generally; as in these examples: *poder vivir, y saber vivir, es la verdadera filosofia*, to be able, and to live according to reason, is the true philosophy. Sometimes this infinitive is elegantly made a substantive, in imitation of the Latin, and has the article *el* prefixed; as, *el vivir, y el morir, son las cosas mas ciertas que tenemos*, that we live, and shall die, or life and death, are what we are most assured of.

This mood is also sometimes governed by verbs, which are joined to a negation; as, *no baze otra cosa que comen*, he does nothing but eat; *no piensa en otro que en hurtar*, he thinks on nothing but thieving;

thieving; *no haze mas que llorar*; &c. he does nothing but weep, &c.

Observaciones de cada tiempo.

Remarks on each particular tense.

The indicative has the most tenses of all the moods; and these are either simple or compound. The former are the present, the preterimperfect, the preterperfect definite, and the future; the latter, that is, the compound tenses, are the two preterperfects indefinite, the preterpluperfect, and the second future. There are two other tenses, which are also called compound tenses; not that they are more so than the others, but because they differ from them in the manner of their composition, as may be seen in the conjugation of the verbs, and in the different signification of each tense, given in the beginning of this grammar, to which, for the avoiding a prolix repetition, I refer the reader.

Del preterito imperfecto, Of the preterimperfect.

This tense (as the name itself declares) speaks the action imperfectly passed in regard to the time in which we speak, but present in regard to something which is also passed, so that it has an eye both to the present and passed; as, *yo comia quando llegó*, I was eating when he arrived. Here the action of eating is present, in regard to the time of the person's arrival, but past in regard to the time in which I make this relation; *yo escribia quando vino*, I was writing when he came. This is so plain, that I need not multiply examples, and shall therefore proceed to

Del

Del preterito definido e indefinido.

The preterperfects definite and indefinite.

It has been an error common to all, who have wrote grammars, for the instructing foreigners in the Spanish tongue, to confound the definite and indefinite tenses, saying, *escrivi ayer, escrivi esta noche, he escrito ayer, he escrito esta noche.* How wrong they are in this, the following rule and examples will demonstrate.

Observe then, that the preterperfect definite is employed when we speak of a time perfectly past, and the indefinite when the time is not totally, but past in part, and in part present, or passing. For example, in speaking of the last year, can I say, *he escrito una carta el año pasado?* By no means; for the time or year is intirely past; and therefore, to speak properly, we must say, *escrivi una carta el año pasado*, I wrote a letter last year. Though the English deny foreigners the advantage of learning their beautiful and expressive language, by not publishing a grammar, yet the same difference I have observed by conversing; for it seems to me as shocking to the ear in English, to say, *I have wrote a letter last year*, instead of, *I wrote a letter*, &c. as it does in Spanish, to say, *he escrito*, &c. In speaking of the present year, which is but in part passed, I am not allowed to say, *compuse un libro este año*, I composed a book this year; but if I would speak properly, and like one who understands the language, I must say, *he compuesto un libro este año*, I have this year composed a book; which to me seems also more proper in the English. It is indeed

indeed a matter of astonishment, that no grammarian has made this so necessary a remark before me: I cannot suppose them ignorant of this difference between the definite and indefinite, and can attribute it only to carelessness, to their believing it not necessary, or to their design of obliging those who would learn the Spanish to apply themselves to some master. If any, through a self-opinion and ignorance, impugn this remark, I shall refer them to *Cobarruvias* and *Gracian*, who will, I hope, be allowed thoroughly to understand the Spanish. But, beside these authors, our own ears will set us right; for it must shock any one, who understands this language, to hear, *hè escrito una carta el año pasado*. Indeed the ear cannot instruct a beginner, because it is by being conversant with those who speak correctly, that we become delicate in distinguishing sounds; and we often find people, who are no grammarians, to whom (being used to a polite conversation) several expressions are grating, though they can give no other reason, than that they do not sound right.

Del preterito mas que perfecto,

The preterpluperfect,

Marks a time past before the beginning of some action or circumstance also past; as, *avia cenado quando llegò*, I had supped when he arrived. Here the action of supping was over, the time was past before the person's arrival, which is also past in regard to the time in which I speak.

Del

Del futuro, *Of the futures.*

The indicative mood has two futures, the one simple, the other compound: the simple is, *harè*, I will do; *darè*, I will give; *hablarè*, I will speak: the compound is, *he or tèngo de hazèr*, *hè or tèngo de dàr*, *hè or tèngo de hablàr*, I must do, give, or speak. Now the difference between these futures is, that the one only simply marks the action, whereas the other, to wit, the compound, implies an obligation; a thing that must necessarily be done, given, or said. As for example, *harè lo que me dize*, I will do what you say, what you bid me; *le darè lo prometido*, I will give you what I promised; *hablarè la verdàd*, I will or shall speak the truth. Examples of the compound future: *tengo de hazèr lo prometido*, I must or I am obliged to do what I promised; *hè de dàr gracias à Dios*, I must thank God; *he de hablàr mañana con su amigo*, I must to-morrow speak with your friend. Which examples shew evidently the difference between the simple and the compound future.

Del imperativo, *Of the imperative.*

It is a controverted point among the Latin grammarians, whether there is any difference of time in the imperative mood or not. The Spanish tongue takes part with those, who allow only one time, which is the future: and indeed no command, in my opinion, can be said to regard other than a future; for the action must be subsequent to the command. What some may call the present in the imperative mood, in the Spanish language is borrowed of other moods, as may be seen in the

con-

272 *The Spanish Grammar.*

conjugations of the verbs. The Spanish then allows of only the future, which serves to ask or command; as, *ruegole me dè mi sombrero*, I desire you to give me my hat; *dignese favorecèrme*, be pleased to favour me; *hable con juyzio*, let him speak with judgment; *de esso à mi criado*, give that to my servant; *vaya à la iglèsia*, go you to church.

De los tiempos del optativo y subjuntivo.

Of the tenses of the optative and subjunctive.

These moods have the following tenses; viz. the present, the preterimperfect, preterperfect, preterpluperfect, the uncertain, and the futures both first and second. It is needless to say any thing on these, except on the uncertain, the conjugation giving full intelligence of the others: wherefore, to save time, I refer the reader thither.

Del incierto, *Of the uncertain.*

I speak particularly of this tense, because all grammarians have confounded it with the preterimperfect of the same mood, which by what follows will be proved very false. This tense has its termination in *ria*, and is not, as I have said, to be used indifferently for the preterimperfect, it being contrary to the idiom of the Castilian tongue; for, could we use the uncertain for the preterimperfect, and the contrary, we might say, *iria à Roma, si tuviera dinero*, or *fuesse*, or otherwise, *fuera à Roma, si, &c.* I would go to Rome, had I money; which latter would be intirely wrong. Wherefore take notice, that the uncertain tense is employed, when we speak either conditionally (but then the condi-
tion

tion must follow) or with some doubt; but it can never take *aunque* before or after it, if you will speak correctly: and the preterimperfect must always be preceded by *si* or *aunque*; this uncertain tense can never take either of these particles after it. I shall give examples of both, by which you will see how much the sense of a period is altered by the difference of these tenses. To begin then with the uncertain: *daria à usted diez doblones, si fuera hombre honrado*, I would give you ten pistoles, were you an honest man; *hablaria la verdàd, si no temièra castigo*, I would or should speak the truth, did I not fear punishment. But it would be false, and contrary to the idiom of the language, to say, *diesse or dièra diez doblones, &c.* or *hablara or hablasse la verdàd, &c.* The following are examples of the preterimperfect: *aunque hablara or hablasse la verdàd, nadie me creerà*, though (or although) I should say the truth, no body will believe me; *si hablara or hablasse, &c.* Note, that the termination *hablara* is sometimes used for *hablaria*, but improperly: *hablasse* is different; for I may say, *no hablaria*, or (though not so properly) *no hablara la verdàd, aunque me diera mil doblones*, I would not speak the truth, though you would give me a thousand pistoles. But I cannot say, *no hablasse aunque, &c.* by which the difference is obvious.

Del gerundio, The gerund.

In the Spanish they all end in *do*; as, *amando*, *leyendo*, &c. They govern the same cases, as the verbs from which they are derived; as, *escribiendo èsta carta*, in writing this letter; *hablando à Juan*, *dando à Pedro*, in speaking to John, in giving to Peter: by which it is visible they govern the same

cases as their verbs; for *carta* is here an accusative, and *à Juan*, &c. a dative.

Note, that the gerunds have neither tense, number, nor person; but agree with all. Examples of the present and preterperfect; as, *obrando bien no ay que temer à nadie*, in well doing we need fear no body; *fue muerto subièdo la muralla*, he was killed in mounting the wall. Example for the number and person: *yo le verè, vos le verèis, el le verà passando por la calle*, I, you, he will see him going through the streets. I need say nothing more on the gerunds.

Del participio, Of the participles.

Though there are two, yet they are only distinguished by the different auxiliary verb: the participle of the active has the auxiliary verb *aver*; that of the passive the other auxiliary *ser*. Now the first participle forms only the compound tenses, and the other forms all the tenses throughout every mood; as, *sey amado*. But of this the conjugations will afford sufficient examples, which are therefore needless to repeat here.

De los adverbios, Of the adverbs.

The grammarians differ about these words, *dentro, fuera, encima, debaxo, antes, delante*; some putting them in the rank of adverbs, and others placing them among the prepositions. They are indeed both adverbs and prepositions: when they are followed by nothing, they are adverbs; as, *està dentro*, he is within; *và fuera*, he goes out; *està encima*, it is on the top; *està debaxo*, he is below; *vino antes*, he came before; *camina delante*, go before. They are

are prepositions, when they are followed by some case of a noun ; as, *está dentro de casa*, he is in the house ; *está fuera de casa*, he is out of the house ; *está encima de la casa*, he is on the top of the house ; *aunque fuera debaxo de la tierra*, *lo hallaré*, though it should be underneath the earth, I will find it.

We must take notice, that the adverb is always put before the adjective and participle : I speak of the simple, and not the compound adverb. Examples : *Juan es sumamente dichoso*, John is extremely happy ; *estoy fuertemente persuadido*, I am strongly persuaded ; *estoy totalmente obligado*, I am intirely obliged ; *estoy enteramente convencido*, I am thoroughly convinced. But for the compound adverbs they follow the adjective or participle ; as, *estoy prompto à cada instante para servirle*, I am at every moment ready to serve you ; *es contento à poca costa*, &c. he is contented with little, &c. Adverbs are placed before and after verbs ; but then regard must be had to the tenses ; for with the simple, or tenses not compounded, the adverb comes after ; as, *obrar valientemente es de hombres animosos*, it is the property of brave men to act courageously ; *vivir santamente es cosa necesaria*, to live holily is necessary ; *muere christianamente el que vive bien*, he dies christian-like who lives well ; *ir à riendas sueltas es de hombres no cuerdos*, to loose the reins to our passion is the property of weak men. Those examples are from *Gracian* and *Covarrubias*. The adverb on the contrary precedes the compound tenses, as you may observe in the following examples, taken out of *Quevedo* : *ha padecido cruelmente*, he has suffered cruelly ; *ha sentido el desacato vivamente*, he was sensibly touched with the want

276 *The Spanish Grammar.*

of respect; *à sido tratado cuydadofamènte*, he has been carefully looked after.

Adverbs of time taken absolutely require an article before them. Ex. *à la tarde*, in the evening; *al instante*, in the moment, &c. all which must be observed in the reading; for books are certainly the best masters for teaching the elegance of a language; and I cannot help recommending to the studious the following authors, which contain all the beauties of the Castilian tongue; viz. *Graciàn, Covarrubias, Quevedo, Emprèsas Politicas, D. Antonio de Solis, Exàmen de Ingenios, Novèlas de Miguel Cervantes, las Cartas de Antonio Perez, Gongora, las Poesias del Principe de Esquilache, Calderòn, Mariàna, Don Quixote*, especially the last translation, printed with the Spanish on one side, where the faults of the Antwerp and Madrid impressions are corrected.

De las conjunciones, *Of the conjunctions.*

I have already said, that there are conjunctions copulative, disjunctive, causal, illative, of opposition, exception, conditional; conjunctions of doubting, of declaration, of interrogation, of comparison, of augmentation, of diminution, of conclusion, of time, of order, and of transaction. As the conjunction copulative holds the first rank, I shall begin with that.

De las conjunciones copulativas.

Of the conjunctions copulative.

The true Spanish copulatives are *y* and *e*, which answer to the English *and*, and serve to couple two words,

words, or two different parts of a sentence, which without them would be disjoined. Ex. *ay mucho entre el dexir y hazer*, &c. there is a great deal between saying and doing, &c. *he visto à su Padre esta mañana, y le he dicho todo lo que me mandò su hermano*, I saw your Father this morning, and told him all your brother ordered me. But as these conjunctions require a pretty long discourse, I shall take them orderly, one after another, to avoid confusion.

First then, the conjunctions copulative *y* and *e* are sometimes indifferently put, the one for the other; and at other times it is not allowed to use either without distinction.

2. When the word which precedes the conjunction copulative ends in a vowel, and the word which follows begins with a consonant, you may make use of either the copulative *e* or the *y*; as, *Pedro e Juan*, Peter and John; *Maria y Catalina*, Mary and Catharine; or, *Maria e Catalina*.

3. So, on the contrary, when the word preceding the conjunction ends with a consonant, and that which follows begins with a vowel, you may indifferently use the *e* or *y*. Ex. *un arbol y una planta*, a tree and a plant; or, *un arbol e una planta*; *imitarèmos à los sabios y à los doctos*; or, *imitarèmos à los sabios e à los doctos*, we will copy after the wise and the learned.

4. When the word preceding has a vowel for its final letter, and the word which is coupled begins with the vowel *i*, you must then use the copulative *e*, and by no means employ the *y*; as, *España e Italia*, Spain and Italy; *Alemania e Inglaterra*, Germany and England; *Francia e Inglaterra*, France and England, &c.

278 *The Spanish Grammar.*

I have before said, that the true conjunctions are *y* and *e*, because there are others which serve for conjunctions copulative, though indeed they are not such; I speak of these, *tambien*, *tanto*, *quanto*, *como*, *ni*, and *tanpoco*; on each of which I shall make some useful observations.

Tambien, when it is a conjunction copulative, is always placed at the end of the phrase or sentence, and couples the person and a verb understood, which has been before expressed in the same period; as, *usted lo quiere, y yo tambien*, you will have it, and I also. Where *tambien* is in the place of the verb *quiero*, for the sentence is, *usted lo quierè, y yo lo quiero*, you will have it, and I will have it.

Tanto, *quanto*, *como*, when taken as conjunctions, always speak a relation, and answer the one to the other, in shewing, or giving a reason; as, *harè lo que me dize, tanto per su amor como por el amor de su padre*, I will do what you desire me, as well for your own sake as for the sake of your father; *baze tanto quanto puede para destruirme*, he does all he can to ruin me, to destroy me.

Ni is a conjunction copulative, which disjoins and separates. This some may retort on me as a bull, and ask how that which couples can disjoin? It naturally disjoins the parts of the period, as to the sense; but unites them in the period; as, *no es ni honrado ni loable, &c.* it is neither honest nor commendable, &c. *este punto no pertenesce ni à ti, ni à mi, para decidirlo*, this point belongs neither to thee nor me to decide; *ni beve ni come esta dama*, this lady neither eats nor drinks.

Tanpoco is a conjunction after the same manner as *ni*, that is, it disjoins at the same time that it unites;

unites; as, *si no quiere salir, ni yo tampoco*, if you wont go out, neither will I; *si usted no da esto à su criado, tampoco yo se lo darè*, if you wont give that to your servant, I wont give it him neither; *el abogado à tenido tampoco cuydado del negocio, como el procurador*, the counsellor has taken as little care of the business, as the attorney. Observe, that the conjunction *tambien* is the antithesis of *tampoco*; that is, the one, *tambien*, is employed in a period which affirms, and the other, *tampoco*, in that which is negative; though both the one and the other unite the parts of a sentence, with the difference here mentioned.

De las conjunciones disjuntivas.

Of the conjunctions disjunctive.

These are *ò*, *u*, and *sea*; which last, when a conjunction, is accented over the *à*, to shew it is not the present tense of the subjunctive mood of the verb *ser*, which is ever wrote, without an accent, *sea*. This note I thought necessary, though it is a digression. To return then; the *ò* and the *u* are often confounded either through ignorance, or want of attention: I shall first observe, that the above conjunctions answer to the Latin *vel*, without the least difference between them; and will now give you rules for avoiding the fault above mentioned, *i. e.* the using the *ò* for the *u*, or, *vice versa*, the *u* for the *ò*.

When the word which goes before the conjunction disjunctive, ends with a vowel, and that which follows begins with a consonant, you must employ the *ò*; as, *quiere hazerlo ò no?* will you do

it or no? *es Maria ò Juana la que vino?* is it Mary or Johanna that came? *no sè si lo quiere ò no lo quiere,* I don't know whether you desire it or no; *es sabio ò loco,* &c. he is a wise man or a fool, &c.

When the conjunction disjunctive comes between two words, the first of which ends with a vowel, and the latter begins with another, the *u* must then be made use of; as, *Pedro u Ignacio irà à España,* Peter or Ignatius shall go to Spain; *Juana ù Ana serà mi Muger,* Johanna or Anne shall be my wife; *Pablo ù Antonio serà el culpado,* Paul or Antony will be blamed, the blame will be laid on Paul or Antony.

The conjunction disjunctive *seà* is always placed at the head of a sentence, in which it differs from the *ò* and *u*; for though sometimes they may be found at the beginning of a period, that is not always their place: but *seà* must ever be at the head, and answers to the English *whether*, and the Latin *vel*; as, *seà que lo ayos hecho, seà que no lo ayas hecho, tu padeceràs,* whether thou hast, or hast not done it, thou shalt suffer; *seà danzàndo, seà jugàndo, seà bevièndo, es un hombre de garbo,* whether he dances, plays, or drinks, he is a genteel man; *seà verdàd, seà mentira, seràs castigado,* whether it is true or false (be it the truth or a lye) thou shalt be punished.

De las conjunciones de oposiciòn.

Conjunctions of opposition.

They are in number four, to wit, *pero, entre-tànto, con todo esso, sin embàrgo,* which answer to the *enim, sed, at,* of the Latins; the latter three more properly to *tamen*: they are differently employed in discourse, therefore I shall give you some examples of each.

Pero

Pero seems to subtract something from what preceded it, and gives us a less idea than that we conceived in the foregoing part of the sentence; as, *lo que dizes es verdad por una parte, pero por otra es falso*, what you say is true on the one side, but false on the other; *es admirable este edificio, pero no está bien dispuesto*, this edifice, this structure, is admirable, wonderful, but ill disposed; *estaba muy enfermo, pero ahora está algo aliviado*, he was very ill, but he is now somewhat better; *era el mayor pícaro del mundo, pero al presente es muy honrado*, &c. he was the greatest rascal on earth, but is at present a very honest man. I have already said, that *entretanto*, *con todo esso*, and *sin embargo*, answer to the *tamen* of the Latins; for they may be indifferently used the one for the other: we also have in English three conjunctions, which answer to those three, and may also be indifferently used; to wit, *yet*, *notwithstanding*, *nevertheless*. Examples: *me lo ha prometido, entretanto*, or *con todo esso*, or *sin embargo hizo lo contrario*; you promised it me, yet, nevertheless, notwithstanding, you did the contrary; *no merece que la sirva, entretanto, con todo esso, sin embargo hará lo que pudiere*, you don't deserve that I should serve you, yet, notwithstanding, nevertheless, I will do all in my power, all that I can, &c.

The conjunctions exceptive and restrictive

Are the following, viz. *sino*, *aunque*, *excepto que*, *excepto de*, *amenos que*, *amenos de*. *Sino* answers to the Latin *nisi*, which *nisi*, as all grammarians know, includes also the *sed*; and it is used with the particles *que* and *de*, that is, when *sino* is followed by a verb, and then only: as for example; *no le ruego otra cosa,*

cosa, sino que se acuerde de mi (in which the Spanish exactly corresponds with the English idiom), I ask nothing of you, but that you will remember me; *quiere no solamente esso, sino essôtro*, I will not only have this, but that other; where it may be observed, that the English *but* makes use of the particle *that* as an expletive, (as the Spanish *sino* makes use of the particle *que*) when it is followed by a verb, and rejects it when there is no verb to come after.

The particle in Spanish, as I believe it is also in English, is sometimes thrown out, though a verb follows the exceptive, that is, when a condition is implied; as, *no baga esso, sino quiere ser castigado*, don't do that, without, except, unless, you design to be chastis'd. But in this you see it changes its sense, and is no longer the English *but*.

The conjunction *aunque* is always joined to, and requires the subjunctive; and may with equal elegance either be placed at the beginning of, or follow in the period; as, *es hombre de bien, aunque sea pobre*, he is a man of worth, though he is poor; *aunque sea pobre, es hombre de bien*; *no es rico, aunque sea caballero*, or *aunque sea caballero, no es rico*, though he is a gentleman, he is not rich. I have known some who have said, *aunque es caballero no es rico*, which is quite wrong; for, according to the rules of grammar, *aunque* requires always the subjunctive mood.

The conjunctions *excepto* and *aménos* are both prepositions and conjunctions: I shall take notice of them here as conjunctions only, and under the head of prepositions I shall again mention them as such. You may sometimes indifferently use them; as, *no podia baxer peor, excepto de quitar la vida*, or *aménos de quitarle la vida*, he could not do worse, unless

unless he took his life. You must take notice, that these conjunctions are always followed by the particle *que* or *de*. I have just now said, you may sometimes use them indifferently, *excepto* in the place of *amenos*, or this again for *excepto*. When therefore the particle *de* follows either of these conjunctions, they may be employed the one for the other ; but it is not the same when the particle *que* comes after ; for we may say, *bizo lo peòr que pudo, excepto que no le matò* ; but you cannot say, *bizo lo peòr que pudo, à menos que no le matò*, he did the worst he could, except that he did not kill. But you might say, *à menos de matàrle, excepto de matàrle* ; by which you may see the particle *de* is employed before an infinitive mood.

De las conjunciones condicionales.

Of the conditional conjunctions.

Which are, *si, dado que, supuesto que, puesto el caso que, à condicion*. As these conjunctions are not only differently employed, but have a different signification ; I shall make some necessary observations on every one of them in particular, to the end that the use of them may become familiar and easy.

De la condicion *si*, Of the conditional *si*.

This conjunction governs the subjunctive mood, except a doubt is implied ; for then it governs the indicative ; and this is the only exception : I shall therefore give you some few examples of its regimen both of the one and other. I say then, it always governs the subjunctive, except as above. For example, *si me huviera acordado, le huviera traído sus medias*, if I had bethought me, I had brought your stockings ;

ings; *bizièra lo que me pide si pudièra*, I would do what you ask if I could; *no buviera perdido el pleyto, si huviesse creído à usted*, I should not have lost the suit, had I believed you.

Where there is a doubt, you must employ the indicative mood with *si*; as, *si he hablado mal, castigame*, if I have spoken ill, correct me; *si el pleyto se pierde, será su falta*, if the suit is lost, it will be your fault. These I think sufficient for your instruction: wherefore I shall proceed to

The conjunctions *supuesto que*, *dado que*, *puesto el caso que*, *à condicion*.

These conjunctions always require the subjunctive Mood. *Dado que*, answers to *allowing it to be so*; *supuesto que*, supposing, granting that; *puesto el caso que*, put the case that; *à condicion*, on condition. Examples of their regimen: *dado que venga*, or *veníere à proposito no dexaré de dezirselo*, if, or granting, or supposing that it comes in time, I will tell it you; *supuesto que haga lo que dize, le daré lo prometido*, on condition, supposing that you do what you say, I will give you what is promised; *puesto el caso que llegue à Roma en el mes de Julio, tiene bastante tiempo para hazer el negocio*, put the case he arrives at Rome in July, he has time enough to do the business; *le prestaré mi cavallo, à condicion que me le vuelva mañana*, I will lend you my horse, on condition you will return him to-morrow. Observe, that *quando* is sometimes a conditional conjunction, and put indifferently for *si*; and then it governs the preterimperfect of the subjunctive mood, and that only: but this alternative is not allowed in any other mood or tense, as may be observed

served in the following examples ; *si* or *quando* *hablasse* or *hablara bien entonces, le darè lo prometido*, if he would speak handsomely, I would give him what is promised ; *quando lo quisiessè, yo no lo quisiera*, if you would, I would not ; *si usted lo quisiessè, y yo no lo quisiera*, &c. if you would, and I would not, &c.

De las conjunciones de duda,

Conjunctions of doubting,

Are these ; *si, sea como fuere*. *Si*, as a conjunction of doubt, governs the indicative mood, and answers to the Latin *an*, as you will remark in these examples : *dudo si el rey de Inglaterra aceptara la paz ò no*, I doubt the king of England's accepting the peace, I doubt whether the King of England will accept the peace or not ; *no sè si à dicho que vendrà ò no*, I do not know whether he said he would or would not come ; *no sè si me ama ò no*, I do not know whether he loves me or not, &c.

In the same manner, as a conjunction of doubting, *sea lo que fuere* requires the indicative mood ; *sea como fuere, no puedo hazer mas que cumplir con mi obligacion*, be it as it will, I can do no more than my duty, than comply with my obligation ; *sea como fuere, irè à hazer la embaxada*, be it as it will, I will go and execute the embassy ; *sea como fuere, èl serà ahorcado*, be it as it will, he shall be hanged, &c.

De las conjunciones declarativas.

Of the conjunctions declarative.

I call those declaratives, which point out and declare the meaning of the affirmation ; as, *es de saber*, to wit, that is to say ; and this may be employed

ployed in almost every discourse; it governs neither tense nor mood of any verb, as may be seen in these examples: *los hombres que vienen son quatro, es de saber, Pedro, Juan, Antonio, y Francisco; la Inglaterra es un reyno muy abundante, es de saber, en cerveza, trigo, ganados, sal, &c.* England is a very plentiful country, a very fertile country, to wit, in beer, wheat, herbs, salt, &c.

Note, that *como*, taken as a conjunction declarative, governs neither mood nor tense of any verb, and may supply the place of *es de saber*; for we may say in the above example, *como en cerveza, trigo, &c.* as well as, *es de saber en cerveza, trigo, &c.* again, *los hombres, &c. como Pedro, &c.* as well as, *los hombres, &c. es a saber Pedro, &c.*

De las conjunciones interrogativas.

Of the conjunctions interrogative.

These conjunctions are, *para que? à que? de que? sobre que? porque razon? à que proposito? de donde viene?* these, and these only, are the interrogative conjunctions used in the Castilian language. As these are somewhat difficult, I shall make some observations upon the most common, and most elegant manner of expression, by which I shall at once shew both the grounds and the elegance of the Spanish tongue. Most grammarians have confounded the conjunction *porque* with *paraque*, using them indifferently one for the other; but as this is repugnant to the elegance of the language, I say that they are not to be thus used, having a different signification, though the difference is not sensible, when you translate the said particles into English. For example, *no se porque ni paraque està enojado*, I do not know
for

for what, why, nor wherefore, on what account he is angry; though this difference is not distinguishable in the translation, yet in the Spanish the *porque* refers to the passion of anger, and the *paraque* to the cause or reason of it.

Beside, the conjunction *porque* is sometimes preceded by the particle *el*, which cannot be put before the *paraque*. For example, *ignoro el porque de su enojo*, I do not know the why, the reason of his anger; but I cannot say *ignoro el paraque*: and this difference your ear will teach you.

When the *porque* is used with the article, you may in its stead put the *paraque* without an article; thus, *no se el porque de su enojo*, *no se paraque*, or *porque razon està enojado*, I do not know why you are angry, I do not know the reason or wherefore you are angry.

As *à que?* *de que?* *sobre que?* are very easy both to be understood and rightly employed, I shall neither waste time nor paper in mentioning what the least observation will teach you; nay, the few following examples will prove sufficient for your instruction in this point: *no se à que reducirà el todo*, I do not know to what you will reduce the whole; *de que* or *à que sirven tantas palabras?* to what purpose so many words, of what use are so many words? *sobre que funda sus esperanzas?* on what do you build your hopes? By these examples you may observe, that the Spanish differs nothing from the English idiom in these phrases. Observe by the by, that *que*, *de que?* *à que?* are used instead of each other, as you may see if you will take the pains to look back a little.

288 *The Spanish Grammar.*

Porque raxon? and *à que proposito?* are indifferently used the one for the other, and they are also sometimes indifferently put for *porque* or *paraque?* as, *porque raxon à becho esso?* on what account did you do that? *à que proposito à becha esso?* to what end did you do that? *de donde viena que se mete en negocios ajenos?* why do you meddle with other folks business?

I pass by the conjunctions of comparison, I having already thoroughly treated of them in the beginning of this work, whither I refer the student.

De las conjunciones augmentativas y diminutivas.

Of the conjunctions augmentative and diminutive.

The following are what we call augmentatives, *ademas, porfin, aun*: the diminutives are, *à lo menos*: and as there may be found some difficulty in distinguishing when the former are augmentatives, and when conjunctions copulative, I shall make such remarks on each, as may suffice to obviate all doubt.

Ademas is an augmentative, when it gives an additional epithet, be it either good or bad; as, *Pedro es picaro, ademas de ser ladron*, Peter is a rascal, besides (or over and above) his being a thief. Here is an additional epithet to that of thief; in this sentence *ademas* is both a copulative and an augmentative; for it not only augments the idea of Peter's character, but it connects and joins one evil quality to another. And wherever *ademas* is an augmentative, it is also a copulative.

Porfin has two opposite significations, as you may observe: *tiene algunos defectos, pero, por fin es hombre de bien*, he has some defects, some faults, but

but is in the main an honest man; where it answers to *notwithstanding* in English; *es un picaro, es un borracho, y un ladron; porfin tiene todos los siete pecados mortales, &c.* he is a rascal, a drunkard, a thief; in short, to crown all, he is guilty of all the seven deadly sins.

Aun is also a conjunction augmentative, when it adds to our ideas; as, *es humilde y manso, y aun caritativo*, he is humble, mild, and even charitable; *es putañero, y aun mentiroso*, he is both a whore-master, and a lyer; *es filosofo, y theologo, y aun jurista*, he is a philosopher, and divine, and even a lawyer, &c.

The diminutives are exactly the contrary of the augmentatives; for they lessen our ideas. Ex. *si entrè en la conspiracion, à lo menos no he querido concurrir en su muerte*, though I entered into the conspiracy, however I would not agree to his death; *si no se quiere acordar del hijo, por lo menos acuerdese del padre*, if you will not remember the son, at the least, remember the father. Note, that *à lo menos*, or *por lo menos*, are indifferently used, having the same signification, as may be seen by the above examples.

De las conjunciones causales.

Of the causal conjunctions.

As some of these are also illative, and only differ in the signification, I call those causal, which mark the cause or reason of a thing's being done, and those illative, which mark the inference. The causals answer to the Latin *enim*, for, or *quia*, because; and the illatives to *ergo*, therefore: we shall, in this place, make mention of the causals

U

only,

only, and not of the illatives, which we reserve for the next remark.

These causals are, *pues*, *porque*, *como*, *porquanto*, *luego paraque*, *à fin*; on each of which we shall make some observations, and by example sufficiently explain them.

Among those conjunctions, the most common are *porque* and *pues*, which mark the reason of what is or has been said or done. Suppose a person should ask why a man reasons, and a horse does not, I should answer, *porque el hombre es racional, y el cavallo no*, because a man is rational, and a horse is not. By which it is evident, that the causal *porque* shews, or points out the reason, why a thing is such: but that I may make this altogether easy, take these examples; *este hombre no se mueve, porque, ò pues es muerto*, this man does not move, because he is dead; *este arbol no brota, pues, or porque, es muerto*, this tree does not bud, because it is dead; *bienaventurados los que lloran pues or porque serán consolados*, happy are those who mourn, for they shall be comforted. Take notice, that *pues* and *porque*, as causals, are indifferently put the one for the other.

The conjunction *como* is put for *porque*, and this again for *como*, when *como* begins the phrase: *como la ora de la muerte sea incierta, es menester estar siempre prevenidos*, as the hour of death is uncertain, it is necessary to be always on our guard; or, *porque la ora de la muerte, &c.* because the hour, &c.

The *como* or *porque*, in this sense, corresponds with the Latin *cum*, and sometimes governs the subjunctive, and sometimes the indicative, for we may say *como or porque la ora de la muerte es, &c.*

Por quanto and *à causa que*, taken after the same manner, that is, beginning a sentence, either of them may be employed for *como* or *porque*. Ex. *como* or *porque*, *porquanto* or *à causa que la hora de la muerte*, &c. but if *porquanto* or *à causa que* is in the middle of a sentence, you cannot substitute in the place of either of them; either *como* or *porque*; as, *tu ojo es maligno porquanto soy bueno*, thine eye is evil, because, inasmuch as, I am good: in the place of *à causa que* or *quanto*, should you use *como* or *porque*, the sentence would be unintelligible.

I have just one word to say on the conjunctions *asique* and *paraque*, which is, that they answer to the Latin *ut*, or to the English *to the end that*; and they govern the subjunctive mood; as, *doyte este aviso asique*, or *paraque te emiendes*, I give thee this advice, to the end thou mayst amend; *te doy esta direcion asique* or *paraque balles la casa*, I give thee this direction, to the end that, or that thou mayst find the house.

De las conjunciones illativas.

Of the conjunctions illative.

The following we call illatives, from the supine of the Latin verb *infero illatum*; they answer to the English *therefore*, viz. *pues*, *luego*, y *assi*, y *conque*; they serve to form a conclusion; as, *Pedro es racional, luego es discursivo*, Peter is rational, therefore can reason; *tengo dado mi palabra, y assi la cumplirè*, I have given my word, and will therefore keep it; *Juan fuè à Roma, pues viò al papa*, John was at Rome, he therefore saw the pope; *he prometido pagar mis deudas, conque devo aborrrar los gastos de mi casa*, &c. I have promised to pay my debts, and

must therefore sparé in the expences of my house, &c. These have all, as far as they are illatives, one and the same sense, and may be used the one for the other; as, *tengo dado mi palabra, y assi* (luego, pues or conque) *me puedes creer*, I have given my word, thou mayst therefore believe me. I say, this may be when they are illatives; for otherwise they are neither taken after the same manner, nor have they one and the same signification.

De la conjuncion *que*, Of the conjunction *que*.

This *que* is of the greatest importance of all the conjunctions: as it is of such consequence, I have made mention of it, when it is taken as a pronoun, in the chapter of pronouns; and in other parts of this grammar, I have shewn the manner of using this conjunction *que*.

The *que* is not only a conjunction by itself, but it also makes a part of other conjunctions, in composition, as *asique, aunque, sinque*, &c.

The *que* is put before the present, and the uncompounded or simple preterperfect of the subjunctive mood. It is employed in two different manners or ways, either simply, or governed by a preceding verb: when it is simple, that is, not preceded by a verb, it marks exclamation and repugnance to a thing mentioned, a surprize, or asks a question; as, *que me exponga à bazer lo que me dize! es impossible*; what, expose myself to do what you say! it is impossible; *que sea traidor à mi rey, Dios me libre desso*, that I should be a traitor to my king, God defend me from it; *que hombre es aquel?* what man is that?

When

When *que* is governed by a preceding verb, that verb shall be in the indicative mood, and the verb which follows the *que* in the subjunctive. Ex. *dudo que el rey aya llegado à Hanover*, I doubt of the king's being arrived at Hanover; *me espanto que usted baya hecho tal disparate*, I am surprised that you have committed such a folly.

Take notice, that sometimes this verb in the indicative is, by way of elegance, put at the end of the sentence, which is then begun with *que*. Ex. *no dudo que el negocio no sea como usted dize*, or *que el negocio no sea como usted dize no lo dudo*, I don't doubt the affair's being as you say; *no me espanto que se haya desempeñado*, or *que se haya desempeñado no me espanto*, I don't wonder he has paid his debts,

But this rule does not stand good when we speak in the future, or the uncertain tense; that is, we cannot postpone the verb, which ought to precede the *que*; as in the following examples: *juzgo que se alegraria de verle*, I judge he would be glad to see you; but we cannot say, *que se alegraria de verle juzgo*.

When *que* is preceded by a verb in the imperative, it requires the following verb to be put in the subjunctive mood; as, *ven acá, que te vea*, come hither, that I may see you; *ven acá, que te bable*, come hither, that I may speak to you. In all which you may remark, that the said *que* answers perfectly well to the Latin *ut*.

But when the *que* answers to the Latin *quam*, it denotes an exclamation only, and governs the indicative mood. Ex. *que dichoso es aquel hombre!* how happy is that man! *que desventurado eres!* how

how unfortunate are you! *que trabajos he padecido!* what labours have I undergone! O *que amable princesa es la de Gales!* &c. how amiable a princess is the princess of Wales! &c. I need say nothing more on this particle; for I have taken notice of every thing essential. Let the student only observe, when it answers to the Latin *ut*, or the English *that*, *to the end that*; and when it has the signification of *quam*, how; and he will find no difficulty in using it not only correctly, but even elegantly.

De las interjeciones, *Of the interjections.*

I have already in its proper place given a definition of the interjection; and nothing remains but to shew its use: in order to which we shall first take notice of the different sorts of interjections.

An interjection, I have already said, serves to express the passions, or different movements, of the mind, which are either of joy, or grief, desire, fear, aversion, or admiration; and often one and the same word has very different significations. I have already made some particular observations on each manner of expression, whither I refer the reader; where he may take notice, that the interjection which serves to speak admiration and joy, by the different tone of the voice serves also to shew our surprize and grief. There are some interjections which are used to encourage and animate; as, *animo, amigos!* courage, my friends! but as these are extremely easy, and correspond with the English idiom, and as also they can cause no difficulty, when you meet with them in authors, for they sufficiently declare themselves, it will be losing time

time either to say more of them, or to furnish out a number of examples.

De las preposiciones, *Of the prepositions.*

As the nature and use of the prepositions ought to be well understood, and as few grammarians have spoken either so clearly or so fully on this head, as, in my opinion, they ought to have done, had they seriously at heart the instructing their readers, I shall endeavour to leave nothing unsaid, on this part of speech, which may be of use to the studious. What a preposition is, its very name defines; and I think it unnecessary to dwell on a longer definition: I shall therefore speak to, and give examples of, every one in particular of the most common, that is, of such which occur the oftenest in common discourse, and are most necessary to be thoroughly acquainted with; and as the preposition *à* is of the greatest extent, both in its use and signification, I shall begin with

De la preposicion *à*, *The preposition à.*

As the *à* is not only a preposition, but also a particle, used after very different manners, and has divers significations, I shall, by the following explanation, sufficiently teach you to discern when it is a preposition, and when a particle.

1. It is an indeclinable particle, when it is in composition, as it often is both with nouns, pronouns, verbs, and adverbs, and sometimes augments or diminishes the signification; as, *adineràdo*, to be full of money, compounded of *à* and *dinèro*; it is the participle of the verb *adinerar*, which is also a com-

pound, to heap up money. The English have the word *monied*, which seems a participle, though there is no such verb as *to money*; viz. he is a monied man, *esta adinerado*. *Arrodillarse* is a verb neuter reciprocal, to kneel, compounded of *à* and *rodilla*, the knee; *adelante* is an adverb, compounded of *à* and *delante*, before, &c.

2. It is a particle, when between two infinitive moods; as, *enseñar à jurar*, to teach to swear; *empezar à jurar*, to begin to swear.

3. It is a particle, when it follows a participle or adjective, and is followed by an infinitive mood; as, *estoy prompto à obedecer*, I am ready to obey; *es muy difícil à creer*, it is very hard to believe.

4. It is a particle, when it comes between two nouns of number, or, more properly, between a noun of number, and its repetition; as, *ir dos à dos*, to go two and two; *ir quatro à quatro*, to go four and four; *vinieron dozena à dozena*, they came by dozens.

5. When it marks distance of time or place, it is a particle; as, *à* (for *ay*) *à diez dias que no lo vi*, it is ten days since I saw it; *vivo à veinte millas de Londres*, I lived twenty miles from London.

6. The *à* is a preposition, which marks the dative case in the declension of a noun proper, whether masculine or feminine; as, *escribir à Pedro*, to write to Peter; *à Juan*, *à Maria*, *à Isabela*, &c. I say it marks the dative of nouns proper; for in declining nouns appellative, it takes to itself an *l*; as, *escribir al rey*, *al principe*, &c. to write to the king, to the prince, &c.

7. The *à* marks an accusative after a verb active; as, *amar à Dios*, to love God; *imitar à les santos*, &c. to follow the example of the saints, &c.

Ec. It may be objected, that there is no difference between *escribir à Pedro*, to write to Peter, and *amar à Dios*, to love God; for if the *à* before Peter marks the dative, it ought also to do the same before *Dios*: to which I answer, that there is indeed no difference; however, you must take notice, that when it comes after a verb neuter, it marks a dative, and after a verb active, an accusative case; and that besides it is the sign of the dative case to nouns proper only. I need say no more on this preposition, since what I have already advanced, will be found sufficient to give any intelligent person a just notion of its different significations; for let a grammar be never so full, it is not that alone, but the being conversant with good authors, remarking the turns of their periods, and diligently observing the difference of the idioms in both languages, which will make us masters of that we desire to learn. I shall now proceed to the

De la preposicion *de*, Preposition *de*.

The *de* may be taken either as a preposition, or a particle; for sometimes it is the one, sometimes the other; but as some difficulty may arise, in distinguishing when it is a preposition, and when a particle, the following rules ought to be taken notice of.

When *de* marks the quality, cause, or manner of doing a thing; or answers to *of*, the sign of the genitive in English, it is no preposition, but a particle; as, *es un hombre de bien*, he is a man of probity; *es un hombre de mala vida*, he is a man of an ill life; *el negocio se hará de secreto*, the business shall be done with secrecy; *la causa de su*
en-

enfermedad à fido el beber mucho, hard drinking has been the cause of your illness.

When *de* answers to the Latin *de* or *ex*, or the English *from* or *out of*, it is in Spanish a preposition; as, *vengo de la iglesia*, I come from church; *voy de camino*, I go forward, I am going farther.

When *de* is joined with the instrument, it is a preposition; as, *muelo de hambre*, *de sed*, I die with hunger, with thirst; in which sense it agrees, you see, with *with*. Sometimes in one and the same phrase it may be the sign of the ablative case, and a preposition; as, *à mi buelta de Roma harè lo prometido*, at my return from Rome I will do what I promised; *cà de lo alto*, I fell from on high; *vendrè de quando en quando à verle*, I will come now-and-then to see you; *me promete de dia en dia*, he promises me from day to day.

The *de* is also a preposition, when before adverbs of place or time; as, *de aqui adelante*, from hence-forward; *de alli passò à Londres*, from thence he went to London; *de donde viene usted?* &c. from whence came you? &c. It is often found before the infinitive moods of verbs, and is then a preposition; as, *es tiempo de partir*, it is time to go; *es tiempo de hazer lo que usted me prometìò algunos dias passados*, it is time to do what you promised me some days since; *tengo gana de comer, de beber, de jugar*, I have a mind to eat, to drink, to play; *ès capaz de cometer todo mal*, he is capable of all mischief; *es tiempo de ir à la iglesia*, it is time to go to church; *acabè de cenar*, I have done supper; *concluyo de escribir*, I make an end of writing.

De las preposiciones *en* y *dentro*.

Of the prepositions *in* and *within*.

As these prepositions have often the same sense, and are indifferently used the one for the other, *en* for *dentro*, and *dentro* for *en*, as you may observe in these examples; *está en* or *dentro de la iglesia*, he is in or within the church; *está en* or *dentro de casa*, he is in the house; I have thought proper to take them together, to avoid prolixity by a multiplication of remarks.

Observe then, that in speaking of the time past, you must employ the preposition *en*, and not *dentro*. For example: *lei las obras de Gracian en quinze dias*, I read Gracian's works in a fortnight. But it would not be allowed me to say, *lei las obras de Gracian dentro de quinze dias*. In the same manner, when we speak of the time to come, we must use *dentro*, and not *en*; as, *llegaré à Londres dentro de tres dias*, I will go to London in three days. But it would be wrong to say, *llegaré à Londres en tres dias*. So that all the difficulty is in regard to the time, employing *en* for the past, and *dentro* for the future, as you are taught by the above examples.

As there is no difficulty, after this observation, in the preposition *dentro*, I shall drop it here, and go on with the preposition *en*, which, having divers significations, is not so easy.

This preposition is both of time and place. The phrase itself will sufficiently shew which it is; as, *bizè esto en un instante*, I did this in an instant; *lei este libro en un dia*, I read this book in a day;
llegué

llegué de Londres en tres dias, I came from London in three days; *llegué en un instante*, &c. I arrived in an instant, &c. Examples of place: *vivi en Roma diez años*, I lived ten years in Rome; *en Madrid ay mucho dinero, y en Londres tambien*, &c. there is a great deal of money both in Madrid and London.

In the same sentence, by the figure *zeugma*, the preposition *en* is sometimes a preposition both of time and place; as, *tratarémos de esso en tiempo y lugar*, we will talk of that in proper time and place.

The Spaniards make use of *en*, to shew a condition either good or bad. Ex. *está en estado de hazer su fortuna*, he is in a condition to make his fortune; *es rico en dinero*, he is rich in money; *mis negocios estan en mala calidad*, my affairs are in a bad condition; *puse mis negocios en buen estado*, I have put my affairs in a good state; *en mal estado*, &c. in a bad plight, &c. In which sense it answers directly to the English *in*.

Of the prepositions antes, delante, ante.

The preposition *antes* signifies priority in time; as, *Dios criò à Adam antes del diluvio*, God created Adam before the flood; *Moyseñ fue antes del nacimiento de Christo*, Moses was before the birth of Christ; *Filipe quarto fue rey de España antes de Carlos segundo*, Philip the fourth was king of Spain before Charles the second; *el rey Guillelmo fue rey de Inglaterra antes del rey Jorge*, &c. king William was king of England before king George.

Note,

The Spanish Grammar.

Note, that the said preposition, changed into *i*, helps in the composition of some words, as may be seen in these examples, *anticamara*, antechamber; *antipatio*, a fore yard. In these compounded words it is no longer a preposition, though words in Latin, compounded with a preposition, may govern the same cases as the preposition did when simple; which shews, that in that language the composition does not make them less prepositions, not being divested of their natural property.

De la preposicion *delante*.

Of the preposition before.

This preposition is both of place and order, and often answers to the Latin *coram*: *tengo mi casa delante de la iglesia mayor*, my house is before the great church; *pon essa camisa delante del fuego*, put that shirt before the fire; *quitate de delante de mi*, get from before me, get out of my sight; *mis posesiones estan delante del rio Ebro*, &c. my estate lies before or opposite to the river Eber, &c.

When it signifies the contrary of *despues*, it is of order; as, *el rey camina delante de los soldados*, the king goes before, or at the head of the soldiers; *usted va delante de mi*, you go before me; *que el uno vaya delante del otro*, let the one go before the other. By which you may perceive it is the contrary of *despues*; for if one goes before, there is a necessity that the other should be behind, or after him.

This preposition is put after a verb, and directly answers to the Latin *coram*, in presence of, or before; as, *el año passado prediqué delante del rey*, I preached last year before the king, or in the king's presence;

presence; *predicarè delante del principe la semana que viene*, I shall preach next week before the prince; *me presentarè delante del juez*, I will make my appearance before the judge; *hablarè delante de todo el mundo*, I will speak before the whole world, &c.

De la preposition *ante*, *Of the preposition before.*

The Spaniards make use of this preposition in very few phrases; and as there is no room to say a great deal upon it, I shall only tell you, that it sometimes signifies priority, and sometimes it has the force of the Latin *coram*: take these few examples; *ante todas cosas es menester leer, escribir, comer, beber, &c.* we ought, or it is necessary above all things, or before all things, to read, write, eat, drink, &c. *ante nos escrivanos, secretarios, comisarios, &c.* before us notaries, secretaries, commissaries, &c. *el rey fuè servido mandar que biziessen informacion ante los alcaldes, corregidores, &c.* the king has been pleased to order, that information should be made before the sheriffs and governors, &c. This is all that can be well said on this preposition.

De las preposiciones *cerca y acerca*.

Of the prepositions near and about.

The preposition *cerca* marks nearness or proximity of things, time, or place, and requires the genitive case of nouns, and the infinitive mood of verbs, with the particle *de*; as, *cerca de la una, de las dos*, near one, near two o'clock; *cerca del nacimiento de Christo*, near the birth of Christ; *vivir cerca de mi casa*, to live near my house; *cerca de la iglesia*, near the church; *cerca del palacio*, near the

the palace; *esta cerca de perecer*, he is near perishing, &c.

We need say very little on the preposition *acerca*, which is compounded of the particle *a* and the preposition *cerca*, and differs from *cerca* in signification, the latter answering to the English *near*, the former to *concerning* or *about*. As for example; *vivo cerca del palacio*, I live near the palace; *no tengo que decir acerca del negocio*, I have nothing to say in the business, about or concerning the, &c.

De las preposiciones, *despues* y *atras*.
Of the prepositions *since* and *behind*.

The preposition *despues* is both of time and place. When it is a preposition of time, it answers to the English *since*. It requires after it the genitive; as, *despues de la creacion del mundo*, since the creation of the world; *despues del diluvio*, since the deluge; *despues de Pasqua*, &c. since Easter.

When it is a preposition of order, or place, it answers to the English *after*, and will, in that sense, have also the genitive; as, *usted deve andar despues de Pedro*, you ought to go after Peter, &c.

When it is followed by a verb, it is a preposition of time, and answers again to the English *after*; as, *despues de haver escrito esta carta, llego el correo*, the post arrived after I had wrote this letter; *despues que buvo acometido el enemigo, perdiò el animo*, after he had attacked the enemy, his courage failed him, &c.

The preposition *tras* is always of place, and never changes its signification; it answers to the English *behind*, and *detras* is the same. Ex. *se escondiò tras* or *detras de la iglesia*, he hid himself behind the church.

church. So that sometimes it takes the *de* or *a* before it, as in the above, and this following example; *a dexado tras de si, a tras de si, or detras de si, a todos sus companeros*, he left all his companions behind him.

De la preposicion con, Of the preposition with.

This preposition is the same with the English *with*, in every signification; for, like that, it marks union, the instrument, and the manner. I shall speak with all the conciseness possible on this preposition. When two parts of a period are joined by *con*, it marks a union; as, *esta dama se casara con este cavallero*, this lady will be married with (to) this gentleman; *estoy bien con todo el mundo*, I have disputes with no body; *ire con Pedro a Roma*, I will go to Rome with Peter; *mescle el vinagre con el azeite*, I have mixt the oil with the vinegar; *por fabricar una casa es menester arena con cal*, &c. sand with lime is needful for the building an house, &c. It is instrumental, or signifies the instrument, when it shews how, after what manner or means, or with or by what a thing is acquired or done; as, *con el favor de Dios espero alcanzar su gloria*, by the grace of God I hope to enjoy his glory; *supeditaré mis enemigos con el socorro de Dios*, with the help of God I shall overcome my enemies; *con el ayuda de mis amigos, no necessitare jamas*, with the help of my friends, I shall never want; *con la bazienda que tengo, puedo vivir bonradamente*, I may, can live in credit with the estate I have; *hablar con elegancia*, to speak with elegancy, elegantly; *Ciceron hablo con eloquencia*, Cicero spoke eloquently, with eloquence; *la señera todo lo que haze*,

haze, lo haze con delicadèza, all the lady does, she does it with delicacy; *los Españoles hablan con altivez, y los Franceses con arrogancia*, the Spaniards speak loftily, the French arrogantly. In these examples are all the different uses and signification of the preposition, as may be verified by the testimony of antient grammarians, father Salas, Antonio de Nevrix, father Manuel, &c.

De la préposicion *entre*, Of the preposition betwixt.

This preposition is both of place and time, and answers to the English *between* and *betwixt*; as, *entre la creacion del mundo y el diluvio passaron muchos años*, there were many years between the creation of the world and the deluge; *entre las Navedades y Pasqua està Quaresma*, Lent is between Christmas and Easter. In the above examples it is evidently a preposition of time; and it is as plain, that in the following it is a preposition of place, *el ayre està entre el cielo y la tierra*, the air is betwixt heaven and earth; *entre Londres y Madrid està la mar de por medio*, the sea lies betwixt London and Madrid; *sientese entre los dos*, &c. sit between the two, &c.

De la préposicion *fuera*, Of the preposition out.

This preposition answers to the English *out* in every signification, unless it is used for an exceptive; it is a preposition both of time and place, except when it marks unreasonableness. I shall set down some examples of its various uses: *fuera de sazón*, out of season; *està fuera de la iglesia*, he is out of the church; *fuera de la ciudad*, out of the city; *fuera del reyno*, out of the

the kingdom. In the following it marks extravagance, or something unreasonable, and exactly corresponds with the English idiom, *esta fuera de juicio*; he is out of his wits; *la carne esta fuera de precio*, meat is out of price, beyond reason dear; *lo que dizes es fuera de toda razon*, what you say is out of all reason, is unreasonable.

I have already said it is an exceptive; as, *soy de su sentir en todo quanto à dicho, fuera de ir à Roma*, I am of your sentiments in all you have said, except in the going to Rome; *toda la compañía se fuè fuera de tres ò quatro*, all the company went away except three or four; *fuera de esto, soy de su sentir*, I am, except in this, of your opinion. In this last sense the Spaniards often use *excepto*, in the stead of *fuera*; as, *todos se fueron fuera mi padre*, or *todos se fueron excepto mi padre*, all but my father went away. *Excepto* is looked upon, as may be demonstrated from the best authors, the most elegant manner of expression, especially where *fuera* happens to fall in with any word which resembles it in sound; as, *se fueron, fuera, &c.* where the jingle takes off the smoothness of the period.

De la preposicion *para*, Of the preposition for.

The preposition *para* has been often confounded with *por*, which is a very foul blunder, and such as none who understand the language can be guilty of: my intention being to remove all difficulties, and to omit nothing necessary to the instruction of the learned and curious nation, for whose sake I have undertaken this fatiguing work of a grammar, I have set down, in the following rules, what is sufficient to shew the distinction between these two prepositions;

tions; and whoever will observe them, will never fall into the unpardonable error of using one for the other.

The preposition *para* is put before an infinitive mood, or between two infinitives; as, *para morir bien, es menester vivir bien*, we must live well, to die well; *lo que dize es hablar para hablar*, &c. what you say is talking for talking-sake, &c. But as this preposition is differently employed, and has many different significations, I shall, to render them more easy to the reader, give them distinctly.

1. This preposition marks the motive, cause, reason, or end of a thing's being done; it shews the why, as, *Dios criò todo lo criado para el hombre*, God made the whole creation for man, for the use of man; *el hombre inventò muchas cosas para su comodidad*, man invented many things for his use; *el obispo de Londres fundò en la parochia de San Martin un hospital para ayudàr à los pobres*, the bishop of London founded an hospital in St. Martin's parish for the relief of the poor; *bize una casa para socorrer los necesitados*, I have built an house for the assistance of the necessitous. By which it is visible, that the *para* is used when the question is why, wherefore, to what end?

2. It shews and denotes for what employment, or use, a person or thing is good, proper, or fit for; as, *este hombre es bueno para secretario*, this man is fit for a secretary, to make a secretary of; *este cavallo es bueno para el coche*, this horse is fit, is proper for a coach; *este muchacho es bueno para fastre, para platero*, this boy is fit to make a taylor, a silver-smith, &c.

3. This preposition serves to denote convenientcy or inconvenientcy ; as, *esta casa es muy pequeña para mi*, this house is very little for me ; *el patio no es bastantamente grande para la casa*, the court is not large enough for the house ; *esta cavalleriza es capaz para mis cavállos*, this stable is large enough for my horses, &c.

4. *Para* is a preposition of time, though in the future only ; for, when we speak either in the present or preterperfect tense, we must use *por*, and not *para*, as we shall observe in speaking of that preposition. Take now the following examples of the preposition *para* : *aora y para siempre sea el nombre de Dios alabado*, let the name of God be praised both now and for ever ; *tengo en mi casa provisiones para un año*, I have a year's provision in my house ; *los subditos an jurado fidelidad al rey para siempre*, subjects have sworn everlasting fidelity to the king ; *me acordaré para siempre del agravio que me as hecho*, &c. I shall ever remember the injury you have done me, &c.

De la preposicion *por*, *Of the preposition by.*

This preposition denotes the cause efficient of a thing, or the motive of doing or ordering the said thing, as you may observe in the following examples.

Those of the efficient cause, *Dios crió todo por su omnipotencia*, God by his omnipotence made the whole creation ; *el hombre à sido reconciliado con Dios por la muerte y passion de Christo*, man was reconciled to God by the death and passion of Christ. By which examples it is evident, that *por* denotes the efficient cause of the creation, and our reconciliation to God.

Examples

Examples of *por*, when it marks the motive of some action; as, *todo lo que haze lo haze por vengança*, revenge is the motive of all you do; *no habla mas que por embidia*, he only speaks through envy; *he becho este por effotro*, I have done this for that; *el rey ganó la voluntad de sus subditos por su prudencia*, the king by his prudence gained the love of his subjects. Here the cause or motive of the thing is by these examples clearly denoted by this preposition *por*; there being nothing remaining which can cause any difficulty or doubt, I proceed to

The preposition against, contrary, overagainst.

De la preposicion *contra*.

This preposition has three different significations; one of opposition, the second of contrariety, and the third has a regard to the situation of place.

It signifies opposition, when it denotes a contrary interest, will, or opinion, or makes a resistance. For example, *el nao camina contra viento y marea*, the ship goes against wind and tide; *los malcontentos subornaron al pueblo contra el rey*, the malecontents have bribed the people against the king; *la abstinencia es el unico remedio contra la calentura*, abstinence is the only remedy against a fever.

It signifies contrariety, when one obstinately, against all impediments, reason, or advice, pursues any thing; as, *lo que à becho à sido contra mi dictamen*, what he did was contrary to my instructions; *se casò contra la voluntad de su padre*, &c. he married against his father's will, &c. Note, in

310 The Spanish Grammar.

this it is often changed for *non obstante*; as, *ufsted à becho effo non obstante*, or *contra mis consejos*, you have done this notwithstanding, or contrary to my advice.

In the following examples it will be evident, that it signifies place, or the situation of the place in question; as, *el perro meò contra la pared*, the dog pissed against the wall; *vivo contra la iglesia mayor* (note, that in this example it answers *enfrente*, over-against), I live over-against the great church; *enfrente* or *contra* is used indifferently in this sense by Gracian., and other authors of note.

De las preposiciones *por acá*, *mas allá*, *àdemas*.

Of the prepositions on this side, beyond, and beside.

The prepositions *por acá* and *mas allá* are prepositions of place, with this difference, that *por acá* speaks nearness, and *mas allá* distance, in English *on this side*, *beyond*, as in the following examples: *vivo mas acá de la Lonja*, I live on this side the Exchange; *vivo mas allá de la Lonja*, I live beyond the Exchange. Where, though both imply a distance, yet *mas allá* speaks the greater.

The preposition *àdemas* signifies augmentation or addition, and sometimes it is put before the infinitive mood with the particle *de*; but when it is put before a finite mood, it requires *de que*. I shall give examples of both; and first for the infinitive: *àdemas de comèr quisièra bevèr*, besides his eating he would have to drink, i. e. he required drink as well as meat; *àdemas de cantàr querria danzàr*, besides his singing he would dance, he would dance as well as sing. Example of the finite; *àdemas de que dixè,*
que

que Newton es un filosofo, es aun buen Christiano, besides what I have said, that Newton is a philosopher, he is a good Christian.

De las preposiciones desde y hasta.

Of the prepositions from and till.

The preposition *desde* is a preposition both of time and place; as, *desde mi tierna edad he sido desgraciado*, I have been unfortunate from my infancy; *desde à hora*, &c. from this instant, &c.

It answers also to the English *from*, when it denotes place; as, *esta casa se deve reedificar desde sus fundamentos*, this house must be built from its foundations; *veo venir los navios desde mi ventana*, &c. from my window I see the ships come, &c.

Hasta is also a preposition both of time and place; as, *esto no se avia de executar hasta mañana*, this ought not to have been put in execution till tomorrow; *le aguardarè hasta medio dia*, I will stay for him till noon; *irè hasta la Lonja*, I will go to the Exchange, I will go as far as the Exchange; *le acompañarè hasta su casa*, I will keep you company as far as your own house; *se fueron juntos hasta Londres*, they went together as far as London, to London.

There are other ways or manners of using *hasta*, which mark a duration of time; as, *gritas hasta à no poder mas*, thou shriekest till thou canst shriek no longer; *se dixerón baldones hasta llegar à las manos*, they scolded till they came to blows.

Or denotes a whole; as, *todo hombre bierra hasta el mas discreto*, &c. all men, even to the most prudent,

312 *The Spanish Grammar.*

dent, commit errors, &c. Which manner is both very common and very elegant in the Spanish language.

De la preposicion *sin*, *Of the preposition without.*

This preposition, in its genuine sense, answers to the *absque* or *sine* of the Latin, the English *without*, and marks exclusion or privation of something; it goes before the noun or verb, and governs the accusative case; as, *es un hombre sin honra*, he is a man without honour, void of honour, of no honour; *es hombre sin juicio*, he is a man without (of no) judgment; *leo sin aplicacion*, I read without application; *usted habla sin pensar*, &c. you speak without thinking, &c.

De la preposicion *lexos*, *Of the preposition far.*

This preposition signifies distance of place, answers to the English *far*, and governs the genitive case; as, *viva lexos de Londres*, I live far from London; *vivo muy lexos de acá, de allá, de la iglesia*, I live very far from hence, from thence, from the church. Sometimes it marks distance of time: *estamos lexos del verano, del invierno*, &c. we are far from summer, from winter; the summer, the winter is yet a long way off, &c.

There are different expressions, in which the *lexos* is used metaphorically; as, *habla muy lexos de la razon*, what you say is far from, or very wide of good sense; *es lexos de hazer la paz*, he is far from making peace; *muy lexos que le quisièsse dañar, antes le queria servir*, &c. very far from doing him damage, he would sooner serve him, &c.

De

De la preposicion *sobre*.

Of the preposition upon or over.

I need say no more on this preposition, than that it answers in every thing to the English *upon* or *over*; as, *pon el vestido sobre la cama*, lay the cloaths on the bed; *el principe tiene dominio sobre diversos pueblos*, the prince has dominion over different people; *el superior tiene autoridad sobre el inferior*, the superior has power over his inferior; *prometo jurar sobre las Evangelias*, I promise to swear upon the Evangelists; *os protesto sobre mi honra, sobre mi consciencia, que no sè nada de lo que me dezis*, I protest upon my honour, upon my conscience, I know nothing of what you tell me. Where you may observe, that when it answers to *upon*, it implies an affirmation; when to *over*, a dominion or superiority.

This preposition requires the accusative case, and is sometimes used, as in English, by way of metaphor; as, *sobre que funda su derecho*, &c. on what do you found or build your right, &c.

De la preposicion *debaxo*.

Of the preposition under.

Debaxo is a preposition both of time and place; it is time, when it marks the reign of any prince, and it then answers to the English, *under the dominion*, or *in the reign*; as, *debaxo del imperio de Leopoldo Viena fuè sitiada de los Turcos*, Vienna was besieged by the Turks in the reign of Leopold; *debaxo del gobierno del rey don Pedro el Sabio fueron*

son establecidas las leyes de España, the laws of Spain were established in the reign of don Pedro, furnamed the Wise; *debaxo del consulado de Pompeyo, de Augusto, &c.* under the consulate of Pompey, of Augustus, &c.

When *debaxo* is a preposition of place, it has two indications, one of inferiority, the other of subordination: I shall, by a few examples of both, shew the difference.

It shews inferiority, when one thing is below, or under another, in regard to the situation of the place; as, *mis zapatos estan debaxo de la cama*, my shoes are under the bed; *Dios criò todo lo que esta debaxo de los cielos*, God created all that is under the cope of heaven, God created all that is under the heavens; *tengo una almohada debaxo de mi cabeza*, I have a pillow under my head. By which examples it is evident, that *debaxo* regards inferiority, as to situation of place; for my head being on a pillow, the pillow must be under my head.

The preposition *debaxo* signifies subordination, when it marks one person's being subjected to another; *los soldados estan debaxo de la autoridad del general*, the soldiers are under the authority of the general; *los hijos estan debaxo de la dominacion de sus padres*, children are under the government of their parents; *los subditos que viven debaxo de la dominacion de un principe generoso, son dichosos*, subjects are happy, who live under the dominion of a generous prince.

Debaxo, in short, answers to the English *under* or *below*, even when in a metaphorical sense; as, *engañar al proximo debaxo de la capa de la devocion*, to deceive our neighbour under the cloak of devotion.

devotion. In these examples you may observe, that *debaxo* requires a genitive case after it.

.De la preposición *encima*.

Of the preposition upon or above.

This preposition *encima* is the direct opposite to *debaxo*: but that I may omit nothing, which may conduce to the student's improvement, I desire he will observe, that *encima* is a preposition of place, and signifies superiority, but not of degree; as, *puse el sombrero encima de la tabla*, I put my hat upon the table; *mis medias están encima de la cama*, my stockings are upon the bed. In a metaphorical sense it signifies superiority of rank; as, *se ha puesto encima de todo el mundo*, you have set yourself above all the world. This is all that need be said on this preposition; and, for the others, I refer the reader to the chapter of prepositions; for they are so easy, that it would be wasting paper and time to speak to every one in particular, and swelling this grammar to no purpose. I have not the vanity to think, that nothing necessary has escaped me, notwithstanding the pains I have taken to make this grammar complete. If the reader finds, that it is by much the completest of those which have hitherto appeared, I hope he will excuse what I may have omitted.

The END of the Spanish grammar.

Corta

Corta y Compendiosa

A R T E

Para aprehender

La LENGUA INGLESA,

Compuesta por

PEDRO PINEDA:

El qual obviò todos los exemplos, tanto de las costumbres de todas las naciones de la Europa, como de lo tocante a la religion, que podian ofender en alguna manera; pues su intento no es otro, que animar a los que desearan instruirse en dicho idioma, uno de los mas elegantes de la Europa.

Ha corregido los errores, y emendado los defectos, que en la primera impresion havia, y ha añadido algunos dialogos Ingleses traducidos en Español para más facilitar el asunto, y un corto Hespanismo nunca impresso.

2. **C**OMO pronuncian las dichas letras los Ingleses, y el sonido que viene al oido de un Español que eschucha?

R. De esta manera.

E, bi, ci, di, i, ef, gi, ech, ai, je, ke, el, em, en, o, pi, giu or kiu, er, es, ti, iu, ve, doble iw, ex, uay, zeta.

Observa, que los Ingleses pronuncian *ga, go, gu,* como los Españoles; pero *ge, gi,* que los Españoles pronuncian

pronuncian gutural, los Ingleses las pronuncian como los Italianos, ò Franceses.

Q. Que quiere significar este nombre gramatica?

R. Gramatica no quiere dezir mas, sino, que es el arte que nos enseña a hablar, leer, y escribir en qualquiera language.

Q. En quantas partes se divide?

R. En quatro, es de saber; en ortografia, en prosodia, en etimologia, y en syntaxis.

Q. Que quiere dezir ortografia?

R. Es el arte, que nos enseña a escribir perfectamente en qualquiera language.

Q. Que significa esta palabra prosodia?

R. Es el arte por el qual aprehendemos a bien accentuar las palabras, y pronunciarlas segun el verdadero sonido, que la palabra pide en qualquiera idioma.

Q. Que significa esta palabra etimologia?

R. La etimologia es el arte que nos enseña la derivacion de las palabras.

Q. Que quiere dezir sintaxis?

R. La sintaxis es el arte que nos enseña, y prescribe las reglas para componer, ò formar un discurso segun las dichas reglas.

Parte primera. De las letras.

Q. Que significa esta palabra letra?

R. La letra es un caracter, que denota una simple articulacion segun su sonido.

Q. Quantos sonidos diferentes, ò letras ay en el abecedario Ingles?

R. Ay veinte y seis; viz. *a, b, c, d, e, f, g, h, i, j, k, l, m, n, o, p, q, r, s, t, u, v, w, x, y, z.*

Q. Se dividen estas letras?

R. Si,

R. Si, en dos, es de saber en vocales, y consonantes.

Sett. primera.

Q. Que quiere dezir vocal?

R. La vocal es la letra, que se pronuncia, sin ayuda de otra letra.

Q. Quantas ay en la lengua Inglesa?

R. Seis, como en la Española, es de saber, *a, e, i, o, u, y*, la y Griega es vocal, quando està al fin de alguna palabra, y entonces, al oido de los Españoles, viene el sonido como si estuviesen escritas estas palabras Inglesas, *by, cry, fry, dry, thy, &c.* con estas letras, *bai, crai, frai, dray, bay, &c.* y algunas vezes tiene el sonido, de la letra *e*, en Ingles, en estas palabras, *holy, happy, mercy, &c.* Digo de la letra *e*, en Ingles, porque los Ingleses pronuncian la dicha letra, como los Españoles pronuncian la *i* Latina, y otras vezes, como una *e*, como se verá, quando se hable de la *e*.

Q. Quantos sonidos tienen las vocales en la lengua Inglesa?

R. Regularmente dos, corto, ò largo sonido, ò pronunciação; como se puede ver en las palabras siguientes: *lad, lade, met, mete, pip, pipe, rob, robe, tun, tune, &c.*

De la vocal a.

Observa que la *a*, los Ingleses la pronuncian, como los Españoles en estas palabras, *call* llamar, *all* todo, *wall* pared, &c. y otras vezes diferente; como se verá en la explicacion della.

Q. Quantos sonidos tiene la vocal *a*?

R. Tres: primero corto, exemplos; *bad* malo, *lad* muchacho, *mad* loco: segundo luengo, como, *lade* cargar,

cargar, *made* hizo, *trade* trato: el tercero fuerte, y se semeja a la pronunciação de las letras *aa*; viz. *all* todo, *call* llamàr, *stall* establo.

Q. Quando la vocal *a*, se a de pronunciar con un sonido corto?

R. Primero, en todas las monosilabas, que acaban con una consonante: exemplos; *bat* pedazo, *fat* lexos, *mad* loco, &c. Segundo, quando dos iguales, ò dos letras consonantes de la mesma forma, se juntan en la mitad de la palabra, como, *batter* mescla, *canot* no puede, *farrier* albeytar. Tercero, quando una sola consonante en la mitad palabra haze el sonido fuerte ò doble, como los Españoles pronunciendo, la doble *ss*, ò *rr*, como, *banish* desterrado, *dragon* dragon, *habit* costumbre, &c.

Q. Quando la *a* se ha de pronunciar luenga?

R. En todas las palabras que acaban con la letra *e* muda, esto es, que no se pronuncia, como, *make* figura, forma, hazer; *late* hado, *late* tarde, *babe* niño, *glade* goso, &c. Segundo, quando acaba una sílaba, en palabras de muchas sílabas, exemplos, *cra-dle* cuna, *la-dle*, cucharon, *con-tem-pla-ti-on* contemplacion, *ve-xa-ti-on* vexacion, *con-si-de-ra-ti-on* consideración, &c.

Q. Tiene la *a* vocal otro sonido ademas del corto y luengo?

R. Si un sonido muy fuerte, como dixe arriba, en estas palabras; *all* todo, *shall* quiero, *call* llamàr.

Q. Quando la *a* se ha de pronunciar fuerte?

R. Se ha de pronunciar fuertè, quando està puesta delante de *ll*, como, *all* todo, *call* llamàr, *tall* alto, *wall*, pared: segundo, quando se pone delante de las letras, *lk*: exemplos; *stalk* palo, *talk* habla, *walk* passeio, &c. tercero quando se pone delante

delante de las letras *lt*, como *malt* sevada preparada para hazer cervesa, *salt* sal, &c. quarto, quando esta colocada entre la *w* y *r*, en una misma silaba: exemplos; *war* guerra, *warren* esearmiento, *ward* barrio, *warm* calor, *warn* aviso, &c. y en estas palabras, *watch*, relox de faltriquera, ò guardia; *water* agua, *wash* lavar, *wrath* saña ò enojo, y sus derivativos.

Q. La *a*, conserva su sonido, quando es la ultima letra de la palabra?

R. No; porque en la lengua Inglesa, no ay otras palabras que acaben en *a*, que las siguientes: *flea* pulga, *pea* guifante, *plea* excusa, *sea* mar, *tea* una hierva; *yea* for *yes*, si, en las quales la letra *a*, nunca se pronuncia, pero si la *e* la precede, entonces se pronuncia luenga.

De la vocal *e*.

Observa, que los Ingleses y Españoles pronuncian la *e*, con el mismo sonido en estas palabras: *element* elemento, *elephant* elefante, *ebb* marèa; *reduced* reduzido, &c.

Q. La letra *e* se pronuncia corta ò no?

R. Si: en todas palabras, que acaban con una ò muchas consonantes.

Q. Si gusta darme algunos exemplos?

R. Helos agui: *whet*, aguzar, *let* estorvo, *to fret* amohinarse, *bed* cama, *den* cava ò cuèva, *help* ayuda; *left* izquierdo, *belm* rimon, *bemp* cañamo, *dent* abolamiento, *bent* doblegado, *kept* guardado, *berd* hatò, *herb* hierva, *term* termino, *bern* gaza, *pert* vivo, *flesh* carne, *desk* armario, *best* mejor, *rest* descanso, *length* longura, *strength* fuerza, *better* mejor, *letter* letra ò carta, &c.

Q. Quando

Q. Quando la *e* se ha de pronunciar luenga?

R. En las palabras de una sílaba, teniendo la *e* muda, ó que no se pronuncia al fin della: exemplos, *bede, pelle, vere, crete, glebe, bere, mede, mere, mete, rare, scena, scheme, sphere*, y en las demas palabras que acabaren con dichas sílabas, ó con la sílaba *ere*; se ha de pronunciar luenga en las palabras siguientes: *blaspheme* blasfemo, *complete* completo, *concede* concedo, *concrete* concreto, *convene* juntarse, *extreme* extremo, *grieve* aflicción, *impede* impedir, *intercede* interceder, *interfere* entremeterse, *intervene* intervenir, *proterve* protervo, *precede* preceder, *recede* bolver atrás, *replete* repleto, *severe* severo, *sincere* sincero, *supreme* supremo. Observa, que las palabras, *complete, replete, extreme, supreme*, amenudo las escriben, con *ea*, como *complete*, mas no es según la verdadera ortografía de la lengua Inglesa.

Q. De quantas maneras es espresada la letra *e*, en la escritura.

R. De quatro fuertes; primero, *ea*, como *arrear* atrassado, *appear* pareçer, *bead* cuentas de rosario, *beast* bestia, *cease* cesar, *complete* acabar, *deal* distribuir, *fear* temer, *glean* espigar, *bear* sufrir, *tear* cerca, *veal* ternera, *zeal* zelo; segundo, como *ei*, *fancy* fantasia, *conceive* concevir, *deceit* engaño, *conceive* comprehender, *deceive* reirse de alguno, *inveigle* sonñacår, *receipt* recibo, *seize* apoderarse, &c. el tercero por *ie*, como *atchievement* proesa, *believe* creencia, *bessege* sitiår, *bere* aqui, *brief* breve, *cashier* caxero, *chief* xefe, *field* campo, *frontier* frontera, *grief* aflicción, *grieve* pesadumbre, *grievous* que aflige, *yield* cedido, *thief* ladron; el quarto,

como *ee*, exemplos, *bleed* sangria, *creed* el crédo, *reed* caña, *seed* simiento ò semilla.

Q. Se pronuncia la simple, ò *e*, sola, l'luenga al fin de alguna palabra?

R. Si: primero, al fin de todas las forasteras recibidas en la lengua Inglesa que acaban con una *e*, en su primitivo language en los nombres propios; como, *Phæbe* Febo, *Penelope* Penelope, *Xantippe* Xantipo, *epitome* epitome, excepto en esta palabra *ode*, en la qual la *e* no se pronuncia.

Q. De quantas fuertes, la *e*, luenga se pronuncia, como tal, al fin de las palabras?

R. De cinco fuertes; la primera, como si fuesse una *y* Griega, en estas palabras: *holy* santo, *happy* dichoso, *daily* cotidiano, &c. la segunda, como, *ie*, *busy* empleado, *gypsy* gitano, &c. las quales palabras, aora se escriven con la *y* Griega solamente, como *busy* ocupado, *crazy* loco, *gypsy* gitano, &c. la tercera, como *ey*: exemplo, *balconey* balcon, *honey* miel, &c. la quarta como si huviesse dos *ee*, viz. *agree* convenir, *bee* aveja, *knee* rodilla; la quinta, como si se escrivesse con *ea*, viz. *stea* pulga, *pea* guisante, *plea* excusa ò escusa, *sea* mar, *tea* una hierva, *yea* for yes, si.

Q. A que fin ponen, la letra *e*, que no se pronuncia en la palabra?

R. A fin de alongar las siguientes vocales; viz. *mad*, *made*, furibuyendo; *bit*, *bite*, pedaço; *not*, *note*, no, ni.

Q. Quales son las letras que piden la *e* muda, ò que no se pronuncia?

R. Son las letras *i* y *u*, porque no ay palabra que acabe en *i* ò *u* en la lengua Inglesa, sin la *e* muda.

De la letra vocal i.

Observa, que los Españoles e Ingleses, algunas veces la pronuncian de la mesma suerte; como, *incredibility* increíble; *incredulity* incredulidad, &c. mas otras veces la pronuncian muy diferente; como, *time*, tiempo; y en otras muchas palabras, como si estuviesse escrita, la palabra *time* con *ai*, y la pronuncian, *tai*me.

Q. Quantos sonidos tiene la i?

R. Cinco, luengo, corto, como *u* vocal corta, y corto y, y como doble *ee*.

Q. Quando la i se ha de pronunciar luenga?

R. En todas las monosilabas que acaban con una e muda, como *time* tiempo; y entonces digó que se pronuncia como si estuviesse escrita *tai*me, y los Ingleses la llaman pronunciasion luenga; de esta pronunciasion se han de escluir estas palabras: *give*, *live*, que la pronuncian como los Españoles, *dàr*, *moràr*, ò *moràda*.

Q. Quando la i se deve pronunciar corta?

R. En todas las monosilabas que tienen una consonante simple: como, *bid* ordenado, *did* hecho, *win* ganancia, *sin* pecado, *pin* alfiler, *bit* golpe, *pit* hoyo, *sit* asiento; y la pronuncian como los Españoles; y en las siguientes palabras, que tienen doble consonante, como, *bill* cedula, *still* aun, *will* testamento ò benevolencia, y quando en la mitad de la palabra ay doble consonante: como, *bitter* amargo, *billow* ola, *winner* ganancioso, *dinner* comida, &c.

Q. Tiene la vocal i otro sonido?

R. Si: quando la i està puesta delante de la r, y se le sigue otra consonante, entonces se pronuncia como una *u* corta: exemplos, *birch*, *dirt*, suziedad,

324 La Gramatica Inglesa.

shirt camisa, *sir* señor, *spirit* espíritu, *thirty*, fuzio, *thirsty* sediento; mas quando la *i* tiene doble *rr*, delante de *si*, entonees se pronuncia como arriba: exemplos, *irreligious* irreligioso, ò fin religion, *irreverent* sin reverencia, &c. la *i* puesta delante de *er*, y despues de *st*, de la y Griega; exemplos, *collier* carbonero, *bolier*, *pannier*, capacho, &c.

Q. En la lengua Inglesa ay alguna palabra que acaba con una letra *i*?

R. No: ni una.

De la letra vocal *o*.

Q. Quantos sonidos tiene la *o* en la lengua Inglesa?

R. Quatro; primero luengo; como *go*, *lo*, *so*, *vete*, *ve*, *aqui*, *affi*; segundo, corto, como *not*, *plot*, *no* ò *ni*, conjuracion, &c. el tercero, como dos *oo*, como *move* mover, *prove* provàr; el quarto, como una *u* corta, como, *come* ven, *month* mes, &c. Observa, que los Ingleses pronuncian la doble *oo*, algunas vezes, como los Españoles pronuncian la *u* vocal en esta y otras palabras; viz. *good* bueno, y en esta palabra *poor*, pronuncian la doble *oo*, como si estuvièsse escrita con estas letras, *puer*, segun el sonido de la pronunciasion Española; y algunas vezes los Ingleses y Españoles la pronuncian de la mesma manera, ò sonido; como *opinion* Español, *opinion* Ingles.

Q. Quando la *o* tiene el sonido luengo en la lengua Inglesa?

R. Quando està puesta delante de las figuientes letras, viz. *ll*, *ld*, *lt*, *lst*: exemplos, *poll* hazer estorcion, *robàr*, *bold* audaz, *told* dicho ò portafgo, &c.

Q. Quando la *o* ha de tener el sonido corto?

R. En

R. En todas las monosílabas, que acaban con una consonante sola; exemplos, *nod* señal que se haze con la cabeza; *dog* perro, *log* leño, &c.

Q. Quando la *o* tiene el sonido de la *u* corta?

R. Quando està puesta delante de las siguientes letras; viz, *m*, *r*, *th*, *y*, *v*: exemplos, *come* venir ò acudir, *comfort* consuelo ò alivio, *fathom*, lo que se puede abarcar con entrambos brazos, *brother* hermano, *grove* alameda, &c.

De la vocal *u*.

Q. Quantos sonidos tiene la *u* vocal?

R. Dos, es de saber, corto y luengo; exemplos, *tun*, *tune*, tono; algunas vezes los Ingleses la pronuncian como si estuviesse escrita de esta manera *iu*, quando està puesta al principio de la palabra, y algunas vezes la pronuncian como los Españoles, y algunas vezes como si la adelantara una *o* ò *u*; exemplos, *unity*, *iunity*, unidad, *universe*, la pronuncian, *iuniverse* el universo, *unity*, *iunity*, unidad, &c. *ulcer* llaga ò ulcera, *unable* inabil, &c. *unalterable*, en esta palabra, la *o*, suena en el oido de un Español como si estuviesse escrita assi *onalterable*.

Q. Quando la *u* vocal *a* de tener el sonido corto?

R. A de tener el sonido corto, quando se le figue una ò muchas consonantes en una misma palabra: exemplos, *rub* fregar, *grub* lombriz, *burst* reventar, *rust* orin, moho, &c.

De la vocal *y*.

Observa, que quando la *y* es vocal (porque algunas vezes no lo es), los Españoles la pronuncian como los Ingleses en muchas palabras: ex-

emplos, *yolk* yema de huevo, *yard* vara ó, patio, *yellow* amarillo, *yes* si: y la pronuncian sin alguna diferencia, de la que los Españoles pronuncian la *y* en estas palabras; ya *already*, ayuda *help*, yermo *desert*, &c. algunas veces la pronuncian como una *i* Latina: exemplos, *brandy* aguardiente, *many* muchos, &c.

De las vocales dobles.

Q. Que quiere dezir, vocal doble?

R. No significa mas, que una mixtura de dos vocales en una misma sílaba, y tienen diferente sonido de las otras vocales; exemplos, *void* nulo, y la pronuncian como si estuviese escrita, *vaid* como *oo*, en esta palabra *food* sustento, alimento, pronuncian *oo*, como, *u*, *fud*, segun la pronunciação Española.

Q. Quantas vocales propiamente llamadas vocales ay en la lengua Inglesa?

R. Tres; viz. *oi*, *oo*, *ou*, como se puede ver en los exemplos, *void*, *food*, y en esta *house* casa.

Q. Conservan siempre el sonido mixto?

R. No siempre, porque la doble *oo* algunas veces tiene el sonido de la *u* corta: exemplos, *blood* sangre, *flood* diluvio, y algunas veces de la *o* luenga, en estas palabras: *door* puerta, *floor* suelo, *Moor* Moro, &c.

De las vocales impròpias.

Q. Que entiende, por esta palabra, vocal impropia?

R. Quando se ponen dos vocales en una misma sílaba sin mixtura del sonido, entonces dezimos es una vocal impropia, porque la una es siempre muda, ó no se pronuncia.

Q. Quantas

Q. Quantas dobles vocales improprias tiene la lengua Inglesa?

R. Tiene treze, viz. *aa, ai, au, ea, ee, eo, eu, ie, ei, oa, oe, ue, ui.*

Q. Que sonido tiene la doble *aa*, en la lengua Inglesa?

R. El mismo que la lengua Española tiene en esta palabra *Aaron*.

Q. Quantos sonidos tiene *ai*?

R. Generalmente tiene el sonido luengo; exemplos, *faint* desmayo, *saint* santo; algunas vezes pronuncian *ai*, como, *e ô i*; exemplos, *again* otra vez, *fountain* fuente, &c. y assi tiene tres sonidos *ai*.

Q. Quien es el sonido de *au*?

R. *Au*, no tiene mas que un sonido, y es el del *a*; masculino, como, *all* todo, *call* llamamiento, *fraud* fraude, y se semeja a la pronunciasion de la letra *a* Española.

Q. Quantos sonidos tiene *ea*?

R. *Ea* tiene quatro sonidos: el primero, luengo, como, *swear* jurar, *tear* lagrima, *wear* uso; el segundo corto: exemplos, *heart* corazon, *bearken* escuchar, &c. el tercero, como una *e* corta: exemplos, *already* ya, *ready* pronto, *breast* pechos, *bead* cuentas de rosario: en estas tres palabras y otras muchas, los Ingleses pronuncian *ea*, como los Españoles *e*; el quarto, como una *e* luenga: exemplos, *fear* temôr, *near* cerca, *appear* parecer. Al oido de los Españoles, parece que estas palabras estên escritas con estas letras, *fier, nier, appier*, &c.

Q. Que sonido tiene la doble *ee*?

R. La doble *ee* tiene siempre el sonido semejante a la *e* luenga: exemplos, *creed* el simbolo de los apôstoles, *green* verde: y a los Españoles en la

pronunciación parece que esten escritas estas palabras assi, *crid grin*.

Q. Quantos sonidos tiene, *eo*?

R. *Eo* tiene tres; el primero, como *e* corta, como, *leopard*; y le pronuncian, como si estuviese escrita *lepard*, segun los Españoles perciven en la pronunciación; el segundo, como una *e* luenga: exemplos, *people* pueblo, *feodary* feudatario, y al oido de los Españoles, viene el sonido, como si estuviesen escritas estas palabras assi, *pipl*, &c. el tercero como una letra *e* corta: exemplo, *George* Jorge.

Q. Que sonido tiene *eu*?

R. *Eu*, ó, *ew*, tiene el sonido de la *u* luenga: exemplos, *Deuteronomy* Deuteronomio, *pleurisy* mal de costado, *dew* rocío, *few* pocos, *pew* affiento en la Iglesia, *pewter* peltre, &c. al oido de un Español, como, *diu*, *fiu*, *piu*, *piuter*.

Q. Quantos sonidos tiene *ie*?

R. Tiene tres: el primero como una *e* luenga: exemplos, *cieling* techado, *cashier* caxero, *field* prado; el segundo, como una *e* corta: exemplos, *pierce* horadar, *penetrar*, *fierce* feroz, estas dos palabras pronuncian los Ingleses como los Españoles, esto es todas las letras segun el sonido, excepto la última *e*, que no la pronuncian, y la llaman *e* muda; el tercero como una *e* ó *i* luenga al fin de la palabra: exemplos, *busy* ocupado, &c. mas aora escriben esta palabra con una *y* Griega, y la pronuncian, como una *i* Latina, exemplos, *busy*, *crazy*, loco, al oido de un Español viene al sonido como si estuviesen escritas: *bisi*, *crezi*, &c.

Q. Quantos sonidos tiene *ei*?

R. Tres; el primero, como *ai*; viz. *feign* disimulo; el segundo, como una *a* luenga, *eight* ocho; y el tercero, como una *e* luenga; exemplos, *perceive* com-

comprehendido, *deceit* engaño, *deceive* engañar. Español sonido, *perciv*, *decit*, *deciv*, porque la *e* es muda.

Q. Quantos sonidos tiene *oa*?

R. Tres; el primero como una *o* luenga, como *cloak* reloj, *float* balsa, *goat* cabra; el segundo, como *au*, *goal*; mas agora escriven esta palabra assi: *jail*, que significa carcel.

Q. Quantos sonidos tiene *oe*?

R. Tiene tres: primero, como una *e* luenga, como *oeconomy* oeconomia, *Oedipus*, nombre propio, *oecumenical*, *universal*, &c. el segundo como una *o* luenga: exemplos; *do* gama, *foe* enemigo, *slow* tardio, *toe* dedo del *pie*; el tercero, como doble *oo*, ò una *e* muda: exemplos, *shoe* zapato, *hose* media, &c.

Q. Quantos sonidos tiene *ue*?

R. *Ue* tiene dos, el primero como una *u* luenga: exemplos, *accrue* aumento; el segundo, quando *ue* están puestas despues de la *g*, sirve para pronunciar dichas *ue* mas fuerte: exemplos, *catalogue* catalogo, *colleague* colega, *dialogue* dialogo, *fatigue* fatiga, &c. de esta regla se ha de escluir esta palabra, *ague*, que se pronuncia, como si fuesse escrita en Español con estas letras, *ego* terciana.

Q. Quantos sonidos tiene *ui*?

R. *Ui*, tiene tres; el primero como una *i* luenga: *guide* guia, *disguise* disfras, *quiet* quieto, y pronuncian estas palabras, como si estuvieffen escritas (segun la pronunciasion Española) con estas letras, *disguayse*, *guayse*, *quait*, observando que la ultima letra *e* es muda, ò no la pronuncian, como he dicho amenudo.

Seet. segunda. De las consonantes.

Q. Que quiere dezir letra consonante?

R. Letra

R. Letra consonante no quiere dezir, mas sino una letra que no se puede pronunciar sin el ayuda de alguna vocal antepuesta, ò pospuesta: exemplos, *m*, que no se puede pronunciar sin anteponerla la letra *e*, *em*, la *d* no se puede pronunciar sin posponerla la *e*, *de*, y assi de todas las demas.

Q. Quantas letras consonantes ay en el abecedario Ingles?

R. Ay veinte y una: viz. *b, c, d, f, g, h, j, k, l, m, n, p, q, r, s, t, v, w, x, y, z*; y se dividen en mudas y liquidas, explicacion de las quales las hallaràn en el abecedario Español, y para evitar repetición los remito allà.

Q. Que quiere dezir media vocal?

R. Se llama, semivocal, ò media vocal una letra consonante que haze un imperfecto sonido, juntada con una consonante, sin ayuda de una vocal: exemplos; *blemish* culpado, *probable* probable, &c. La lengua Española tiene semivocales, como la Inglesa: exemplos, *probable*, *proporcion*, *proposicion*, &c. mas por falta de cuydado ningun gramatico Español ha hecho mencion de dicha semivocal: mas espero que los academicos de Madrid cuydaràn de las semivocales, quando publiquen la gramatica que han prometido en su dicionario, por la lengua Española.

De la letra b.

Q. Como se pronuncia la letra *b* en Ingles?

R. Los Ingleses la pronuncian como Españoles sin alguna diferencia: exemplos, *babler* parlero, *balm* bálamo, *bean* hava, *bestial* bestial, *black* negro, *boar* berràco, *bob* mofa, *body* cuerpo, *bold* atrevido, *border* borde, *boot* haling, robo, *bottom* hondo, *bower* vergel, *brag* jacancia, *breakfast* almorzàr, *breviary*

breviary breviario, *brisk* vivo, jovial, *brother* hermano, &c.

De la letra c.

Q. Quantos sonidos tiene la letra *c* en la lengua Inglesa?

R. Dos; el uno muy fuerte, ò rezio, como la letra *k*; y el otro dulce, como la letra *s*.

Q. Quando la *c* se ha de pronunciar fuerte?

R. Se pronuncia siempre fuerte, puesta delante de las siguientes letras *a*, *l*, *o*, *r*, *u*: exemplos, *cat* gato, *cord* cuerda, *foga*, *cut* corte, *talle*, *clean* limpio, *crab* manzana silvestre.

Q. Quando la *c* tiene el sonido dulce, y suave?

R. Quando està puesta delante de las siguientes letras *e*, *i*, y: exemplos, *cease* cesar, *desist*, *Clement* Clemente, *city* ciudad, *cypher* cifra, y quando señala ò denota la ausencia de la letra *e*, en esta palabra, *plac'd*, en lugar de *placed* colocado.

De la letra d.

Q. Como se pronuncia la *d* en Ingles?

R. Como la *d* en Español: exemplos, *dartil* dátil, *day* escopeta, *deacon* diacono, *debt* deuda, *diabolical* diabolico, *dialect* dialecto, *doctor* doctor, *dolphin* delfin, *dolor* dolor, *domicil* domicilio, *dubious* dudoso, *ducat* ducado, *dysentery* disenteria.

De la letra f.

Q. Se pronuncia la *f* en Ingles como en Español?

R. Si; sin alguna diferencia; y los exemplos siguientes lo manifestarvan: *fables* fabulas, *fabric* fabrica, *facile* facil, *facinorous* facinoroso, *fantasm* fantasma, *to feast* festejar, *fertile* fertil, *fervency*, *fervor*, *fiercely* ferozmente, *filial* filial, *filtration* filtracion,

tracion, *final* finàl, *firmlly* firmemènte, *firmness* firmeza, *fiscal* fiscàl, &c.

De la letra g.

Q. Quantos sonidos tiene la g?

R. Tiene dos, el uno fuerte, y casi guturàl; y el otro dulce y suave.

Q. Quando la g se pronuncia fuerte, y casi guturàl?

R. Quando està puesta delante de las letras *a, o, u, l, r*, si no està suavizada por las letras *d, e*, esto es, si a la g, se le sigue, la *de*; porque entonces se pronuncia la g, dulcemente, como se puede ver en las siguientes palabras; viz. *badge* divisa, *cage* xaula, *rage* rabia, *lodge* pequeña camara, *doge* el duque de Venecia, *huge* grande.

Q. Quando la g se ha de pronunciar dulcemente?

R. Quando està puesta delante de las letras *e, i, y*; *gender* genero, *gentle* gentil, *gipsy* gitano. La g se pronuncia fuerte puesta delante de la *i* en estas palabras; *begin* comenzàr, *give* dâr, *forgive* olvidar, *gibberish* gerigonza, *gibble-gabble* mofa, *giddy* liviano, atolondrado, *giglet* risueño, *gilt* dorado, *gilder* dorador, *gimlet* barrena, *gird* cintura ò cîncha, *girl* muchacha, y sus compuestos; quando dos *gg* se hallan juntas en una palabra, se pronuncia fuerte, aunque se le siga las letras *e, i*, escluyendo, *exaggerate* exagerado.

Q. Quales son las consonantes, que figuen a la g, en la misma silaba?

R. Las letras *b, l, n, r*: exemplos, *ghost* es-piritu, *glad* alegre, *great* grande, *ground* molido, &c. pero si la g precède a la *n*, entonces la g no se pronuncia:

nuncia: exemplos, *gnat* ñudo, *gnash* batir los dientes, *gnomon* la aguja que señala las oras en el relox del sol.

Q. Es la *gb* pronunciadas al fin de la palabra?

R. Si, pero como dos *ff* al fin de la palabra: exemplos, *cough* tos, *tough* duro, *rough* rudo, *laugh* risa: en todas las demas palabras no se pronuncia, solo sirve para alongar la vocal que se la antepone: exemplos, *night* noche, *sigh* vista, *light* luz, y las pronuncian segun el sonido que llega al oido de un Español, como si estas palabras fuesen escritas con estas letras, *neit*, *seit*, *leit*, algo gutural.

Q. Se pronuncia la *g* antes de la *n*, al fin de la palabra?

R. La *g*, al fin de la palabra, es regularmente muda, y solamente sirve para alongar la precedente vocal: exemplos, *sign* señal, *design* definio, *ensign* alferez, *consign* consignar, *lign* linea, *benign* benigno, *condign* condigno, *malign* maligno.

De la letra h.

Q. Es la *b* una letra?

R. Aunque algunos han escluido la *b* del numero de las letras en la lengua Inglesa, contodo en las siguientes palabras es una letra: exemplos, *band* mano, *bare* liebre, *bope* esperanza, *bell* infierno, *bill* cerro; porque si se quita la *b* no solamente el sonido, mas aun la significación está trocada, como *and* es una conjuncion copulativa; *are* es la tercera persona plural del presente del indicativo del verbo ser ò estar en Ingles.

De la letra j.

Q. La *j* tiene diferentes sonidos ò no?

R. No, porque siempre se pronuncia como una *g* dulce, en esta palabra *ginger*: mas quando acontece
esta

334 La Gramatica Inglesa.

esta pronunciación dulce delante de las letras *a, o, u*, se ha de escribir con la *j*, y no con la *g*.

De la letra k.

Q. Se pronuncia la *k* en Español como en Ingles?

R. Si, y tiene el sonido de la *q*, en muchas palabras, segun se puede ver en los exemplos siguientes: *question* *questiòn*, *keen* vista aguda, y pronta, *keenly* ardientemente, *kell* redañò, *kelter* traza, *kintal* un quintal, *kiss* besò, *kit* rabelillo ò herrada.

De la letra l.

Q. La *l* se pronuncia en Ingles como en Español?

R. Si; sin alguna excepcion, segun se prueba en los exemplos siguientes, sea doble, sea simple: *lacca* *lacea*, *labyrinth* laberinto, *lance* lanza, &c. por la simple, por la doble; *a million* un millon, *two million* dos millones; *lieu*, en vez, &c.

De la letra m.

Q. La *m* se pronuncia en Ingles como en Español?

R. Si, sin diferencia alguna.

Q. Puede darme algunos exemplos?

R. Si, y muchos: *magnanimity* magnanimidad; *magnificently* magnificamente, *mayor* *mayor*, *maniac* maniaco, *manifesto* manifiesto, *many* muchos, *marquis* marques, *marshal* mariscàl, *to marvel* maravillar, &c.

De la letra n.

Q. La *n* se pronuncia en Ingles como en Español?

R. Si, no solamente la *n* así escrita, mas aun la ñ con tilde en Español.

Q. Puede darme algunos exemplos?

R. Si he los aqui: *nail* clavo, *name* nombre, *nice* delicado,

delicado, *never* nunca, *neuter* neutro, *new* nuevo, *newly* nuevamente, *new* nuevas, &c. Como el Español en estas palabras, *año*, *añadir*, &c.

De la letra p.

Q. La letra *p* se pronuncia en Español, como en Inglés?

R. Si, y pongo muchos exemplos para verificar lo dicho; *pace* paxo, *pacify* pacificar, *patifier* pacifica-dor, *palate* paladar, *palm* palma, *patrimony* patrimo-nio, *a pavana*, *a dance*, pavana, *peccant* pecante, *perilous* peligroso, *persecute* perseguir, *perverse* per-verso, *plate* plato, &c.

De la letra q.

La letra *q* los Ingleses la pronuncian algunas vezes, en particular en el abecedario, como si fuese pro-nunciada con estas letras, y constara de ellas en pro-nunciandola, *quin*, y algunas vezes la pronuncian como los Españoles en las siguientes palabras, ex-emplos de esta pronunciasion: *quarentine* quarantena, *question* questión, *quarrel* querella, *quietly* qujeta-mente, aunque la pronuncien en el abecedario, como dixe, con todo la pronuncian, leyendo como los Españoles, segun se vee en los exemplos arriba mencionados.

De la letra r.

Q. Los Ingleses pronuncian la *r*, sea doble *r*, sea simple *r*, diferente de los Españoles?

R. No.

Q. Odeme algunos exemplos.

R. He los aqui: *radish* rabano, *rage* rabia, *rancour* rancor, *reason* razon, *redoubt* reduto, *to re-edify* re-edificar, *reformed* reformado, *corrupt* corrum-pido, &c.

De

De la letra s simple, y si doble.

Q. Pronuncian los Ingleses la *s* sea simple, sea doble, diferente de los Españoles?

R. No, en ninguna manera.

Q. Deme algunos exemplos?

R. Helos aqui: *sack* saco, *sauce* salsa, *saved* salvado, *a saving* salvacion, *seed* semilla, *session* sesion, *submits* submisso, *submission* sumission, *submissively* sumissamente, &c.

De la letra t.

Q. Se pronuncia la *t* en Ingles, como en Español?

R. Si: exemplos, *taint* tacha, *tally* taja, *to tally* tajar, &c.

De la letra v consonante.

Q. La *v* consonante se pronuncia en Español, como en Ingles?

R. Si, en todo y por todo.

Q. Deme algunos exemplos, si gusta?

R. Helos aqui: *vain* vano, *vain-glory* vana gloria, *vainly* vanamente, *valour* valòr, *valid* válido, *value* valòr, estima, *valley* valle, *veal* ternera, *vehement* vehemente, *vein* vena, *valiantly* valientemente, &c.

De la doble w.

Q. Tienen los Españoles doble *w*?

R. No tienen.

Q. Como la pronuncian los Ingleses?

R. Como los Españoles pronuncian la *u* vocal.

Q. Deme algunos exemplos?

R. He-

R. Helos aqui : *a wag* focarròn, *to wait for* aguardàr, *wrath* indignación, *worm* gusanillo, *a glow-worm* lucerniega, &c.

De la letra x.

Q. Pronuncian los Españòles la x como los Ingleses ?

R. Los Españòles pronuncian la x como los Ingleses, puesta delante de una consonante : exemplos, *except* excepto, *to excite* excitar, *to exclaim* exclamàr, *exclamation* exclamación grita, los Españòles, en lugar de la x, ponen la s ; mas, segun mi opinion, seria mejor poner la x, en particular en las palabras que se derivan del Latin ; pues creo que los Latinos, no tenian guturales letras, segun aldrete en su origen de la lengua Españòla ; mas si a la x se le sigue una letra vocàl, la pronuncian gutural ; pero los Ingleses, sea consonante sea vocàl, la letra que se le sigue, nunca alteràn el sonido, ò pronuncian.

De la y Griega.

Q. Quantos sonidos tiene la y Griega en la lengua Inglesa ?

R. Tres ; la primera quàndo està puesta delante de una vocàl, tiene el sonido como *ye*, ò mas presto como *yee* : exemplos, *yard* vara, pronunciàndola como si estuviesse escrita assi *eeard*, *yoke* coyunda, como *eeoke*, *yonder* alla ò mas alla, como, *eeonder*, &c. la segunda, como i luenga : exemplos, *body* cuerpo, *holy* santo, *mercy* misericordia, *money* dinero, &c. la tercera, como una i luenga : exemplos, *to buy* compràr, *cry* grito, *dry* seco, *fry* pezesillo, &c.

De la letra z.

Q. La letra z, varia su sonido algunos vezes?

R. Nunca, y se pronuncia en Español como en Ingles: exemplos, *zeal* zelo, *zenith* el zenith, *zephyrus* zefiro, *zodiac* zodiaco, *zoilas* zoilo, *zone* zona, observando, de pronunciarla algo mas dulce en Español, que en Ingles.

Parte segunda. De las silabas.

Q. Que quiere dezir silaba?

R. Silaba no es otra cosa que muchas letras juntas, o pocas pronunciadas en una sola respiracion, consiste o no de una o muchas vocales, o consonantes: exemplos, *A-bel* A-bel, *e-le-ment* elemento, *i-vo-ry* marfil, *u-ni-on* union.

Q. De quantas letras una silaba, en la lengua Inglesa, puede consistir?

R. En la lengua Inglesa ay filabas, que constan, de una, de dos, de tres, de cinco, y de ocho letras.

Q. De me algunos exemplos.

R. Helos aqui: *e-le-ment* elemento, *Eng-lish* Ingles, *strength* fuerza.

Q. De quantas silabas, una palabra Inglesa puede consistir?

R. De siete o ocho silabas, y son mui pocas.

Q. De me algunos exemplos.

R. Aqui estan: *re-con-ci-li-a-ti-on* reconciliacion, *in-com-pre-hen-si-bi-li-ty* incomprehensibilidad, ay pocas palabras en la lengua Inglesa de tantas silabas, como tambien en la Español.

De los generos.

Como la lengua Inglesa no tenga articulos, como la Española, Italiana, &c. es algo difícil para los forasteros, distinguirlos; mas las questions y respuestas siguientes allanarán en algo lo que ahora parece difícil.

Q. Que significa esta palabra genero?

R. Es la distinción del sexo.

Q. Quantos sexos ay?

R. Dos, el masculino y femenino.

Q. Como se distinguen?

R. En la Latina, Griega, y otras lenguas, el genero, ó sexo se distingue, trocando la terminación de la calidad, ó del adjetivo; mas en la Inglesa la terminación de la calidad nunca trueca.

Q. Como pues los sexos se distinguen en la lengua Inglesa?

R. Por las cinco siguientes observaciones, primero por la tercera persona singular de los pronombres personales; viz. *he* el, *she* ella, *it* lo. Segunda, por dos palabras diferentes, como *boy* muchacho, por el masculino; *girl* muchacha, por el femenino. Tercera, añadiendo una calidad al nombre, quando, no ay dos diferentes palabras, para determinar el sexo, como *a male-child* un niño, *a female-child* una niña; la quarta, añadiendo un otro nombre, como *a manservant* un criado, *a maid-servant* una criada; quinta, que en pocas palabras es distinguido el genero masculino, del genero femenino, y solamente en la terminacion; como *abbot* abad, *abbess* abadessa, *baron* baron, *baroness* baronesa, *count* conde, *countess* condesa, y acaban todos en *ess*, y no ay mas de dos que acaban en *ix*; viz. *administratrix* administradora, *executrix* la que executa, ó executora.

Lo demas perteneciente a la gramatica y sus partes, los remito a la gramatica Española e Inglesa, donde hallaran la division de los nombres, y sus definiciones, los pronombres, participios, preposiciones, &c. en su punto, con los verbos conjugados en Español è Ingles, pues no ay ninguna diferencia entre las dos lenguas; hallaràn tambien una sintaxis muy útil, y unos dialogos Españoles è Ingleses, suficientes para instruir al que anhela aprender las dos lenguas; observacion, para facilitar al que aprehende una de dichas lenguas he conjugado muchos verbos, en Español è Ingles, pues, siendo en la Inglesa muy intrincada la irregularidad, y truequen la terminacion de las personas; aviendo dos irregularidades: la primera consiste en trocando la *d* en *t*, y la vocal *e* en *d*, para hazer la pronunciasion mas facil; y la segunda irregularidad, quando el tiempo presente de la afirmacion acaba en *d* ô *t*, el tiempo passado seria lo mismo, que el tiempo presente, como, *love* amo, en el presente, seria tiempo passado, escrita la palabra con las mismas letras; por esso truecan la ortografia, y escriven, en lugar de *love* pres *loved* en el preterito; mas para evitar muchas dudas, juzgue seria mas conveniènte el conjugàrlos, que poner muchas explicaciones, y aumentàr las y assi pongo la lista de los verbos irregulares, con sus terminaciones diferentes, tanto en el presente, como en el preterito, y son los siguientes.

Una

Una lista de los verbos irregulares Ingleses,

A list of English irregular verbs.

Tiempo presente,

Present tense.

Ingles, Español,

English, Spanish.

Preterito definido,

Preter definite.

Ingles, Español,

English, Spanish.

A WAKE	despierto.	Awoke	despertè.
Abide	padefco.	Abode	padeci.
Be	foy.	Been	fuy.
Bend	dòblego.	Bent	dobleguè.
Unbend	no dòblo.	Unbent	no doblè.
Bear	fufro.	Bore, born	fufri.
Begin	comiènzo.	Began, begun	comenzè.
Bereave	despòjo.	Bereft	despogè.
Beseach	ruègo.	Befought	roguè.
Beat	apaleo.	Beaten	apaleè.
Bind	àto.	Bound	atè.
Bite	muèrdo.	Bit, bitten	mordi.
Bleed	sàngro.	Bled	sangrè.
Blow	sòplo.	Blew, blown	soplè.
Break	quièbro.	Broke, broken	quebrè.
Breed	crio.	Bred	criè.
Bring	traigo.	Brought	truxe.
Buy	còmpro.	Brought	comprè.
Catch	còjo.	Caught	cogi.
Chide	repròcho.	Chid, chidden	reprochè.
Choose, chuse	escòjo.	Chose, chosen	escogi.
Cleave	hièndo.	Clave, cleft, cloven	hendi.
Come	vèngo.	Came	vine.

Tiempo presente,
Present tense.

Preterito definido,
Preter definite.

<i>Creep</i>	gateo.	<i>Crept</i>	gateé.
<i>Crow</i>	canto como el gallo.	<i>Crew, crowed</i>	canté.
<i>Dare</i>	oso.	<i>Durst</i>	osé.
<i>Die</i>	muero.	<i>Died, dead</i>	mori.
<i>Do</i>	hago.	<i>Did, done</i>	hize.
<i>Draw</i>	persuado.	<i>Drew, drawn</i>	persuadi.
<i>Drink</i>	bèvo.	<i>Drank, drunk</i>	bevi.
<i>Drive</i>	auyento.	<i>Drove, driven</i>	auyenté.
<i>Dwell</i>	habito.	<i>Dwelt</i>	habitè.
<i>Eat</i>	cómo.	<i>Eat or ate</i>	comi.
<i>Fall</i>	caygo.	<i>Fell, fallen</i>	cai.
<i>Feed</i>	apasio.	<i>Fed</i>	apasenté.
<i>Feel</i>	siénto.	<i>Felt</i>	fenti.
<i>Fight</i>	peléo.	<i>Fought</i>	peleé.
<i>Find</i>	hallo.	<i>Found</i>	hallé.
<i>Flee</i>	hùigo.	<i>Fled</i>	hui.
<i>Fling</i>	echo, tiro.	<i>Flung</i>	echè, ô tiré.
<i>Fly</i>	vuèlo.	<i>Flew, fled</i>	volé.
<i>Forake</i>	desamparo.	<i>Forsook, forsooken</i>	desam- poré.
<i>Freight</i>	fieto.	<i>Fraught</i>	fieté.
<i>Freeze</i>	me hièlo.	<i>Freeze, frozen</i>	me helé.
<i>Gold</i>	capo.	<i>Gelt, gelded</i>	capé.
<i>Get</i>	gano.	<i>Got</i>	gané.
<i>Gild</i>	doro.	<i>Gilt, gilded</i>	doré.
<i>Gird</i>	cincho.	<i>Girt, girded</i>	cinché.
<i>Give</i>	doy.	<i>Gave, given</i>	di.
<i>Grind</i>	muèlo.	<i>Ground</i>	moli.
<i>Go</i>	voy.	<i>Went, gone</i>	fuy.
<i>Grow</i>	creSCO.	<i>Grew, grown</i>	creci.
<i>Hang</i>	ahòrco.	<i>Hung, hanged</i>	ahorqué.
<i>Have</i>	he, tèngo.	<i>Had</i>	uve, ô tuve.

Tiempo

La Gramatica Inglesa.

343

Tiempo presente,
Present tense.

Preterito definido,
Preter definite.

<i>Hear</i>	oigo.	<i>Heard</i>	oí.
<i>Hew</i>	corto.	<i>Hewed, hewen</i>	cortè.
<i>Hide</i>	escondo.	<i>Hid, bidden</i>	escondi.
<i>Hold</i>	àlgo.	<i>Held, holden</i>	alí.
<i>Keep</i>	guàrdo.	<i>Kept</i>	guardè.
<i>Know</i>	conòsco.	<i>Knew, known</i>	conosci.
<i>Lay</i>	miènto.	<i>Laid</i>	menti.
<i>Lead</i>	guio.	<i>Led</i>	guiè.
<i>Leave</i>	dexo.	<i>Left</i>	dexè.
<i>Lend</i>	presto.	<i>Lent</i>	prestè.
<i>Lye</i>	miènto.	<i>Lyed</i>	menti.
<i>Loose</i>	pièrdo.	<i>Lost</i>	perdi.
<i>Make</i>	hàgo.	<i>Made</i>	hizè.
<i>Mow</i>	fiègo.	<i>Mowed</i>	fegué.
<i>Meet</i>	encuèntro.	<i>Met</i>	encontrè.
<i>Rend</i>	ràlgo.	<i>Rent</i>	rasguè.
<i>Ride</i>	cavàlgo.	<i>Rid or rode</i>	cavalgè.
<i>Ring</i> tañèr las campanas.		<i>Rang, rung</i>	tañi.
<i>Rise</i> me levànto.		<i>Rose, risen</i>	me levantè.
<i>Run</i>	còrro.	<i>Ran, run</i>	corri.
<i>Say</i>	digo.	<i>Said</i>	dixè.
<i>See</i>	vèo.	<i>Saw, seen</i>	vi.
<i>Seek</i>	bùsco.	<i>Sought</i>	busquè.
<i>Seeth</i>	còzo.	<i>Sod, sodden</i>	cozi.
<i>Sell</i>	tècho.	<i>Sold</i>	techè.
<i>Send</i>	embio.	<i>Sent</i>	embie.
<i>Shake</i>	facùdo.	<i>Shook, shaken</i>	facudi.
<i>Shear</i> tundo, trasquilo.		<i>Shorn tundi, trasquile.</i>	
<i>Shew or show</i> muèstro.		<i>Shewed, shewn</i>	mostrè.
<i>Shine</i> reluzgo.		<i>Shined, shone</i>	reluzi.
<i>Shoot</i> bròto.		<i>Shot, shotten</i>	brotè.
<i>Shrink</i> grito.		<i>Shrank, shrunken</i>	gritè.

Tiempo presente,
Present tense.

Preterito definido,
Preter definite.

Sing	cànto.	Sang, sung	cantè.
Sink	hùndo.	Sank, sunk	hundi.
Sit	me siènto.	Sat	me sentè.
Slay	deguello.	Slew, slain	degollè.
Slide	deslizo.	Slid, slidden	deslizè.
Sleep	duèrmo.	Slept	dormì.
Sling	hondèo.	Slung	hondeè.
Smell	huèlo.	Smelt	holi.
Smite	hièro.	Smote, smitten	heri.
Speak	hàblo.	Spoke, spoken	hablè.
Spell	letreò.	Spelled, spelt	letreè.
Spill	derràmo.	Spilled, spilt	derramè.
Spend	gàsto.	Spent	gastè.
Spin	hilo.	Spun	hilè.
Spring	bròto.	Sprang, sprung	brotè.
Stand	me pàro.	Stood	me parè.
Stick	pègo.	Stuck	peguè.
Stink	pico.	Stunk	piquè.
Steal	hùrto.	Stole, stolen	huertè.
Stink	hièdo.	Stunk	hedì.
Strike	hièro.	Struck, stricken	heri.
Spit	escùpo.	Spat	escupì.
Strive	contièndo.	Strove, striven	contendi.
Swear	juro.	Swore, sworn	jurè.
Sweep	bàrro.	Swept	barri.
Swell	hincho.	Swelled, swollen	hinchi.
Swing	columpio.	Swung	columpiè.
Swim	nàdo.	Swum, swam	nadè.
Take	quito.	Took, taken	quitè.
Tear	arràncó.	Tore	arranquè.
Teach	enseño.	Taught	enseñè.
Tell	cuènto.	Told	contè.

Tiempo presente,
Present tense.

Preterito definido,
Preter definite.

<i>Think</i>	piènso.	<i>Thought</i>	pensè.
<i>Thrive</i>	mèdro.	<i>Throve, thriven</i>	medrè.
<i>Throw</i>	ècho.	<i>Threw, thriven</i>	echè.
<i>Tread</i>	piso.	<i>Trod, trodden</i>	pisè.
<i>Weep</i>	llòro.	<i>Wept</i>	llorè.
<i>Wind</i>	ventèo.	<i>Wound</i>	ventèè.
<i>Win</i>	gàno.	<i>Won</i>	ganè.
<i>Wear</i>	ùso.	<i>Wore, worn</i>	usè.
<i>Weave</i>	tèxo.	<i>Wove, woven</i>	texi.
<i>Write</i>	escrivo.	<i>Writ, wrote, written,</i>	es- crivi.
<i>Work</i>	trabàjo.	<i>Wrought, worked</i>	trabajè.
<i>Wring</i>	aprièto.	<i>Wrung</i>	apretè.

QUARTA PARTE.

Còrtos dialogos, por los principiàntes, tradu-
zidos palàbra por palàbra,

*Short dialogues for the beginners, translated word
for word,*

DIALOGO PRIMERO.

W HERE have you been, sir?	D ònde à estàdo, caval- lèro?
At church with my mother.	A la iglesia con mi màdre.
Have you heard a good ser- mon?	Ha oído un buen sermon?

A

Muy

346 La Gramàtica Inglesa.

*A very good and a very
learned one.*

*Who preached this morn-
ing?*

It is doctor N. your friend.

He is a very honest man.

He preaches very well.

Whither go you now?

To see a good friend,

*Newly come out of the
country.*

Will you dine with me?

What have you for dinner?

Beef, mutton;

Veal, lamb;

Pease, beans;

A couple of rabbits,

And a very good sallad.

I cannot dine with you.

*It shall be deferred till an-
other time.*

Farewel, I am your servant.

*I am yours with all my
heart.*

II.

W *Hither will you go?
Let us go to Green-
wich.*

Will you go on horseback?

In a coach, or in a boat?

*Let us go in a boat, I pray
you.*

But

Muy bueno y entendido.

*Quien predicò esta ma-
ñana?*

El doctor N. su amigo.

*Es un hombre muy hon-
rado.*

Predica muy bien.

Dònde va usted aòra?

*Para ver un buen amigo,
Nuevamente llegado del
càmpo.*

Quiere comèr con migo?

Que tiene por comèr?

De la vaca, del carnèro;

De la ternera, del cordero;

Gizantes, avas;

Un par de conèjos,

Y una buena ensalada.

*No puèdo comèr con
usted.*

Se diferirà para òtra vèz.

Muy bien, soy su servidòr.

*Soy el suyo con tòdo mi
corazon.*

II.

D *ònde quiere ir?
Vàmos a Green-
wich.*

Quiere ir a cavàllo?

En còche, ò barquillo?

*Vàmos en un barquillo, le
ruègo.*

Mas

*But first let us drink.
Let us drink a bottle of
wine together.*

Let us step into this tavern.

Boy, call your master.

Sir, he is gone out

With his wife and children.

I can draw as good wine,

As any man in England.

Go quickly, make haste.

Let us bargain for a boat

With this honest waterman.

What will you take

To carry us to Greenwich?

I must have eighteen-pence.

I will give you a shilling.

Go, fetch your boat.

Boy, draw another bottle.

To your health, my dear

friend.

Let us pay and be gone.

You are very hasty.

I will return betimes.

Come, let us make an end.

How much have we to pay?

Three-and-six-pence, sir.

There is your money.

You are very welcome.

*Mas primèro bevàmos,
Bevamos una botella de
vino jùntos.*

Entrèmos en èsta tavèrna.

Muchàco, llàma à tu àmo.

Señor, a salido

Còn su mugèr è hìjos.

Puèdo tiràr tã buèn vino,

Cómo qualquièra en In-

glatèrra.

Vàya prontamènte.

Concertèmos por un bar-

quillo

Con este honràdo barquero.

Quànto pide

Pàra llevàrnos a Green-

wich?

Dème dièz y ocho suèldos.

Le darè un skalin.

Vàya, trayga su barquillo.

Muchàco, tira ùna òtra

botella.

A su salud, querido amigo.

Pagèmos y vàmonos.

Usted và de prissa.

Quièro bolver a buena òra.

Acabèmos puès.

Quànto tenèmos a pagar?

Tres skalines y seis suèl-

dos, señor.

Hè aqui tu dinèro.

Usted es son los bien ve-

nidos.

III.

GOOD morrow, ma-
dam.

I am very glad to ſee you.

How does your daughter?

She is very ſick.

What is her diſtemper?

She has a fever.

Has ſhe a good ſtomach?

She can neither eat, nor ſleep.

Have you a good phyſician?

*He is counted a very ſkilful
man.*

Where does he live?

*In Fetter-lane, near the
Raven.*

*What ſays he of her ſick-
neſs?*

*It is pity ſhe ſhould die ſo
young.*

Give me a bit of bread.

*Will you eat any butter
with it?*

Any cheeſe, or fiſh?

*I had rather eat ſome mut-
ton.*

Boiled, or roasted?

Will you drink any wine?

Any beer, or cyder?

*Give me a glaſs of your
cyder.*

III.

BUènos dias, ſeñora.

Me huelgo vèrſa.

Como ſe llèva ſu hija?

Eſtà muy enſèrma.

Que enſermedad tiene?

Tiene calentura.

Tiene ella apetito?

*Ella no pùede comèr, ni
dormir.*

*Tiene uſtèd un buen me-
dico?*

*Es eſtimado por un habil
medico.*

Dònde vive?

*En Fetter-lane, cerca del
Cuèrvo.*

*Que dize el de ſu enſer-
medad?*

*Es láſtima que ella muèra
tan jòven.*

Deme un pedàzo de pàn.

*Quière uſtèd comèr man-
tèca?*

Dèl quèſo, ò del peſcàdo?

*Comièra mas preſto del
carnero.*

Coſido, ò aſàdo?

Gùſta uſtèd bebèr vino?

*De la cervèſa, ò de la ſi-
dra?*

Dème un vaſo de ſu ſidra.

*To your health, madam.
I thank you, sir.*

IV.

HAVE you any thread?
Of what colour will
you have it?

Black, white, red, yellow.

Grey, green, blue.

*Weigh me an ounce of black
thread.*

There's an ounce and above.

How much must you have?

I must have three pence.

Shew me a pair of gloves.

*Some cravats, and hand-
kerchiefs.*

Do you sell any fans?

Yes, and of all sorts.

What do you ask for this?

*Three shillings and six-
pence.*

Will you take half a crown?

I cannot indeed.

It costs me more.

I must get something.

I will give you no more.

Take this for that price.

I do not like it.

Farewel, I am your servant.

I wish you a good night.

A su salud, señora.

Le dòy gràcias, señòr.

IV.

TIène usted hilo?

De que colòr le
quière?

*Nègro, blàncò, ròjo, a-
marillo.*

Pàrdò, vèrde, azùl.

*Pèsème ùna onza de hilo
nègro.*

He qui ùna onza y mas.

Quànto pide?

Pido très suèldos.

*Muèstreme un par de
guàntes.*

Corvatas y pañuèlos.

Vènde usted avanicos?

Si, y de tòda suèrte.

Quànto pide usted por este?

Tres skelines y seis sueldos.

*Quière usted tomàr media
coròna?*

No puèdo en verdàd.

Me cuèsta màs.

Es menèstèr ganàr àlgo.

No le darè màs.

Tòme èsto por el tàl prècio.

No me gùsta, no le agràdo.

A diòs, sòy su servidòr.

Le desseo las buènas nòches.

I wish you the like.

V.

WHAT day is this?

*Monday, Tuesday,
Wednesday,*

Thursday, Friday, Saturday.

*Tell me the seasons of the
year.*

Spring, summer,

Autumn, and winter.

Which is the most pleasant?

The spring assuredly.

Which is the hottest of all?

The summer certainly.

And which is the coldest?

The winter, without doubt.

*The spring brings forth
flowers,*

*And the summer all sorts of
fruits.*

*Can you reckon as far as a
thousand?*

One, two, three, four, five,

Six, seven, eight, nine, ten,

*Eleven, twelve, thirteen,
fourteen,*

*Fifteen, sixteen, seventeen,
eighteen,*

Nine-

Le desseo las mismas.

V.

QUE dia es hoy?

*Lunes, Martez,
Miércoles,*

Juèves, Vièrnes, Sàbado.

Diga las sazones del año.

*La primavera, el veràno,
ô estio,*

El otoño, y el invierno.

Quien es la mas agradable?

Es la primavera ciertamente.

*Quien es la mas calorosa
de todas?*

*Es el veràno verdadera-
mente.*

Y quien es la mas fria?

Es el invierno, sin duda.

*La primavera produce
flores,*

*Y el veràno toda suerte de
fruta.*

Puede contar hasta mil?

*Una, dos, tres, quatro,
cinco,*

Seis, siete, ocho, nueve, diez,

Onze, doze, treze, catorze,

*Quinze, diez y seis, diez
y siete, diez y ocho,*

Diez

Nineteen, twenty, thirty,
forty,
 Fifty, sixty, seventy, eighty,
ninety,
 A hundred, a thousand.
 It is enough for this day.

VI.

WHERE is my hood?

Where are my shoes?
 My gloves, my fan?
 Give me my chamber-gown.

Bring me my garters.
 Where is my comb?
 There it is, madam.
 Comb me, and make haste.
 Clean my shoes.
 Tie my girdle.
 Lend me a pin.
 Bring some coals.
 Blow the fire.
 Shut the door.
 Shut the window.
 Boy, lay the cloth.

Bring some water,
 Spoons, plates, and knives.
 Pray, sir, sit down.
 Eat; you are welcome.

Dièz y nuève, vèinte,
 trèinta, quarènta,
 Cinquènta, sesènta, setènta,
 ochènta, novènta,
 Cièn, mil.
 Es bastànte por èste dia.

VI.

Dònde estàn mi capi-
 ròte?

Dònde estàn mis zapàtos?
 Mis guantes, mi axanico?
 Deme mi ròpa de càmarà,
 ò de levàntar.

Tràygame mis ligas.
 Dònde èsta mi pèyne?
 He le aqui, señòra.
 Pèyneme, y apresùrese.
 Limpie mis zapàtos.
 Ate mi pretina, ò cinto.
 Prèsteme un alfilèr.
 Tràyga carbònes.
 Sòple el fuègo.
 Cièrre la puèrta.
 Cièrre la ventàna.
 Muchàco, mete los man-
 teles.

Tràyga àgua,
 Cucharas, plàtos, y cu-
 chillos.
 Sirvàse, cavàllèro, sentàrse.
 Còma; ustèdes biènvenido.

VII.

VII.

IS your father at home?

He is a bed, at rest,
asleep.

He is weary of his journey.

I'll come again to-morrow.

Come betimes, I pray you.

For he goes out very early.

What hour is it by your
watch?

It is almost twelve.

Is it so late already?

Look at the sun.

Half an hour past twelve.

Go to my shoemaker.

See whether my shoes are
made.

They are not yet made.

This shoemaker is a rogue.

He shall no more work for
me.

He desires you to excuse him.

He will bring them to-mor-
row.

I cannot stay so long.

VIII.

WHAT have you to eat?

I have a quarter of
lamb;

Mut-

VII.

E Stà en càsa su padre?

Està en la càma, el
descansa, el duërme.

Està fatigado de su viàge.

Bolverè mañana.

Venga temprano, le ruègo.

Porquè sale muy de ma-
ñana.

Que òra es en su relox?

Es casi mèdio dia, ò son
casi las dòze.

Es tan tarde ya?

Vèa al sol.

Son las dòze y mèdia.

Vaya a mi zapatèro.

Vea si mis zapatos estàn
hèchos.

No estàn hèchos aun.

Este zapatèro es un picaro.

No trabajarà mas por mi.

Le ruèga escusarle.

Los llevarà mañana.

No puèdo aguardar tanto
tiempo.

VIII.

QUè tiène para còmèr?

Tengo un quarto de
cordèro;

Car-

*Mutton, beef, and pigeons.
Bring me a couple of pi-
geons.*

What will you drink?

A bottle of white wine.

Is your beer good?

It is very good, sir.

Fill me a glass of wine.

It has a very good colour,

But it is very small.

What do you sell it a quart?

Is it dear in this country?

It is sold at eighteen pence.

I drank better in France,

For twopence a quart.

You are not in France;

You are in a country,

Where wine is always dear.

IX.

GOOD morrow, sir.
How do you?

Very well, at your service.

How does your sister?

She is very well, thank God.

Where is she?

She is gone into the country.

When will she come again?

I do not know indeed.

*Have you had your break-
fast?*

Not

*Carnèro, vâca, y pichònes.
Traigame un par de pichò-
nes.*

Que quière bevèr?

Una botèlla de vino blanco.

Es buèna fu cervèsa?

Es muy buèna, señor.

Llène me un vâso de vino.

Tiène una buèna colòr,

Però es muy fiàco.

Quànto lo vènde la quàrta?

Es càro en èste pays?

*Se vènde dièz y òcho su-
èldos.*

*Hè bebido mejor en Fràn-
cia,*

Por dós suèldos la quàrta.

Ustèd no està en Frància;

Ustèd està en un pays,

*Dònde el vino es sièmpre
càro.*

IX.

BUènos diàs, señor.

Como està ustèd?

Muy bièn, a su servìcio.

Còmo està su hermàna?

*Se llèva muy bièn, a Dios
gràcias.*

Dònde està ella?

Hà ido al càmpo.

Quàndo bolverà ella?

No lo sè en verdàd.

Hà almorzàdo?

A a

No

354 La Gramatica Inglesa.

Not yet, sir.

Will you breakfast with me?

With all my heart.

I have a good stomach.

What have you got?

Some bread and cheese;

And a bottle of good beer.

I love that breakfast well.

Eat and drink then.

You are very welcome.

I am much obliged to you.

To your health, sir.

I give you many thanks.

When did you see Mr. T.?

I saw him yesterday.

Did he not speak to you of me?

He told me, he would pay you

Next week without fail.

X.

WHAT *is it o'clock?*

Look at your watch.

It is almost twelve.

Is it so late already?

Yes indeed.

Have you any business?

I must speak with a friend.

No aùn, señor.

Gusta almorzár conmigo?

Con tòdo mi corazón.

Tèngo buen apetito.

Que tiène?

Pan y quèso;

Y ùna botèlla de buèna cervèza.

Amo èsse almuerzo muy bien.

Còma pues y beva.

Ustèd es muy bien venido.

Le estuy muy obligado.

A su salud, cavallero.

Lè doy muchas gràcias.

Quàndo viò ustèd al señor T.?

Le vi ahier.

No le hablo de mi?

Me dixò, pagarià a ustèd

La semana venidera sin falta.

X.

QUE *hora ès?*

Mire a su muèstra, ò relox de faldriquera.

Son càsi las doze.

Es ya tan tarde?

Es ciertamente.

Tiène ustèd negòcios?

Es menester que hable con un amigo.

What

Come

What is his name?
His name is Mr. N.
Where does he live?
He lives at N.
How old is he?
He is thirty years old.
Is he married?
A long while ago.
Has he any children?
He has four.
How many boys has he?
Two sons, and two daughters.
How old is the eldest son?
Four years and a half.
How old is the youngest?
Two years, or thereabout.
Remember me to him.
I will not fail.

Como se llàma?
Se llàma el señor N.
Dònde vive?
El vive N.
Que edàd tiène?
Tiène treinta àños.
Està casàdo?
Mùcho tièmpo hà.
Tiène hijos?
Tiène quàtro.
Quàntos hijos tiène?
Dos hijos, y dos hijas.
Que edàd tiène el hijo màyor?
Quàtro àños y mèdio.
Que edàd tiene el mas joven?
Dos àñs casi.
Hàgale mis bésa mànos.
No faltàre.

XI.

WHEN do you go to bed?

At ten o'clock.
Do you sleep well?
Very well, I thank God.
When do you rise?
Between eight and nine.
How do you pass the day?
As soon as I am up,
I wash my hands;

Then

XI.

QUÀndo va usted a la cama, ô quando se va acostar?

A las dièz.
Duerme usted bien?
Muy bièn, gràcias a Dios.
Quàndo se levànta?
Entre las ocho y nuève.
Como passa usted el día?
Luego que estoy levantado,
Làvo mis mànos;

A a 2

Def.

356 La Gramatica Inglesa.

*Then I rub my face ;
Then I say my prayers ;*

Then I go about my business.

When were you at the play ?

*I was there yesterday.
What play did they act ?*

*The Conquest of Mexico.
Who went with you ?
A good friend of mine.
May I know his name ?
Pray excuse me.*

*Why, is it a crime
To go to the play ?
I do not say so ;
But I do not think fit
To tell you his name.
Let us speak no more of it.*

XII.

WHAT news have you ?

*I know none.
Have you read the Gazette ?
Yes, I have read it ;
But I found nothing in it*

*Worthy notice.
Do you speak French ?
Yes, a little.
How long have you learnt ?*

Four

*Despuès friègo mi càra ;
Despuès digo mis plegà-
rias ;*

*Despuès vòy a mis negò-
cios.*

*Quando estùvo a la comè-
dia ?*

*Estùve allà ahier.
Que comèdia representà-
ron ?*

*La Conquìsta de Mèxico.
Quièn fuè con ustèd ?
Uno de mis amigos.
Puèdo sabèr su nòmbre ?
Le ruègo escusarme.
Porquè, es un crimen
El ir a la comèdia ?
No digo essò ;
Mas no jùzgo a proposito
Dezir a ustèd su nòmbre.
No hablèmos mas dèllo.*

XII.

QUE nuèvas tiène
ustèd ?

*No sè ni ùna, o ningùna.
Ha leido ustèd la Gazeta ?
Si, la hè leido ;
Mas no hè hallàdo nada
en èlla*

*Digna de observàr.
Hàbla ustèd Francès ?
Si, un pòco.*

*Quànto tièmpo aprendiò ?
Quàtre*

Four or five months.

At what hour comes your master?

He comes at eleven.

What is his name?

His name is Mr. B.

How much do you give him?

I give him two guineas.

Does he teach well?

Very well, as I think.

How does your cousin?

He is very sick.

What is his distemper?

He is in a consumption.

What do you think of him?

He is a dead man.

Quattro ô cinco menses.

A que hõra viene su maestro?

Viene a las onze.

Como se llama?

Su nombre es el señor B.

Quanto le dà usted?

Le doy dos guineos.

Enseña bien?

Muy bien, segun pienso.

Como se lleva su primo?

Està muy enfermo.

Que enfermedad tiene?

Es ètico.

Que piensa usted de el?

Es un hombre muerto.

Hispanismo el qual dexè en el tintero quando publique mi gramatica; por descuido, ô por mejor dezir por ignorancia, pues el que enseña a otro, a si mismo enseña.

OBSERVACIONES.

I. **E**L pronombre, vos, està totalmente desterrado, en la lengua Española, tanto en la conversacion como en los escritos: excepto quando el rey habla a sus subditos, el predicador a su auditorio, los padres a sus hijos, y los amos a sus criados, pues

A a 3

hablan

hablan con autoridàd, y si de otra manera se sirven del, vos, incuren en un error.

2. Que merced, ô usted es una mesma cosa, pues dezimos indiferentemète, es vuestra merced, ô es usted Español, ô Ingles.

3. De todas las lenguas de la Europa la Española es la unica en sus derivativos, tanto que ninguna la llega, como se puede ver en los siguientes exemplos : caudàl significa riquèza, y es nombre substantivo, del qual se deriva el verbo acaudalàr, y el adjetivo acaudalado, acaudalada ; y para exageràr que un hombre ès rico dezimos : este hombre tiene mucho caudal, ô este hombre es acaudalado : ô este hombre acaudalò mucho el año passado. Dinèro es un nombre substantivo, del qual se deriva el verbo adineràr, y el adjetivo adinerado, adinerada, y para dezir que tiene mucho dinèro dezimos : es un hombre adinerado. Prenda es substantivo, del qual se deriva el verbo prendàr, y el adjetivo prendado : para dezir que un hombre tiene buenas partes, calidades, ô sabiduria dezimos : Dios prendò a este cavallèro ; fulano es muy bien prendado ; las prendas que Dios se digno dar a vuestra merced, ô a usted, &c. Antòjo, es un nombre substantivo, y de el formamos, el verbo antojàr, y el adjetivo, antojadizo—a, de fuerte, que no solamente formamos del nombre substantivo un adjetivo, mas aun verbos, como se ha visto y verà en los exemplos siguientes ; viz. Pedro acaudalò a Pablo ; esto es, Pedro diò suficiente dinero a Pablo, para le enriquezèr ; la naturaleza prendò muy bien a èsta sehora ; me he antojado ir a Madrid. Palo significa un pedazo de Madera, y de èste nombre se forma el verbo apaleàr, exemplo : me apaleò como si fuesse un Pèrro ; le apaleè. Baraja es un nombre substantivo, y de el

se forma el verbo barajar: ex. Barage bièn los naypes. Del verbo anocheser se derivà el nombre noche. Del verbo amanecèr, el nombre mañana. Ay una infinidad de espreciones derivativas en la lengua Española que acortan muchas sentencias y evitan muchas circumlocuciones, que si las pusièra todàs seria nunca acabàr.

4. Los Españoles en algunos frases se firven indiferentemente, de la conjuncion, como, ò del ablativo absoluto, con tanta elegancia, que no ay ninguna lengua que la exceda, y muchas que no la llegan: ex. como la reyna huvo salido; ò la reyna haviendo salido, entrò el rey. Escritas las cartas, las lleve a la estafeta. Acabada la comida, todos se fuèron, ò como, ò luego que la comida se acabò, &c. vencido el enemigo di parte al rey de la victòria.

5. Los Españoles se firven de los verbos auxiliares, havèr, ò tenèr, para señalar empeño, obligacion ò necesidad: ex. he de ir a comèr, tengo de ir a Madrid, he de pagàr mis deudas, he de vencèr a mi enemigo, ò he de morir.

6. Quando a la proposicion, con, se le junta, si, con los pronombres, mí, ti, si, se le a de juntàr la sílaba, go: como se puede vèr en los siguièntes exemplos: quando vaya a la corte usted vendrà conmigo, quando usted vinière a mi casa lleve a su muger consigo. Hablo contigo, &c.

7. Quando los Españoles se firven de los adverbios que acaban en *ente*, entonces suprimen el, *ente*, en la primera parte del discurso, para evitar cacofonia, dexando el *ente* del primero adverbio, mas no del segundo: ex. me recibìo civil, y cortesmente: viva santa, y christianamente: las zagalas de España vàn segura, y libremente por do quièren.

8. Se

8. Se ha de evitâr siempre dos negaçiões en un mismo discurso : ex. no se ha de dezir, no condeno ninguna proposicion de las que usted haze, sino : no condeno proposición alguna de las que usted haze.

9. Algunos ponen la particula que, en lugar de como, pero es contra la elegancia de la lengua Castellana : ex. es tan valiente que discreto, lo qual es falso ; mas se a de dezir : es tan valiente como discreto.

10. A tanto y quanto siempre se les sigue el adverbio, *mas*, ex. quanto mas sabio es un hombre, tanto mas se ha de estimar.

11. Algunos confunden la preposición *por* con la preposición *para*, y para evitâr este inconveniente, se ha de observar, que la *por*, mira a la causa eficiente, para a la final : ex. todo lo que Dios criò por su omnipotencia, fuè para el servicio del genero humano : por amor de Dios ayudeme, para alimentâr mis hijos.

12. Quando todos los idiomas de la Europa se sirven de un nombre sustantivo con la particula de ; los Españoles se sirven del participio passivo del verbo que tiene la significación del nombre sustantivo : ex. muero de cansado, emplean tambien un nombre adjetivo despues de la particula *de*, como : se precia de rico, se precia de valiente, se precia de hermosa y algunas vezes sin la *de* : ex. se estima hermosa.

13. Quando una persona pide a otro, que ora es, el Español responde : es la una, son las dos, son las seis, son las diez, son las doze, &c.

14. Quando dos amigos se encuèntran, si es a la mañana, se saludan de esta manera : Buenos dias tenga usted : R. Buenos dias de Dios a usted ; si a la tarde : Buenas tardes tenga usted : R. Buenas se las de Dios a usted : los demas cumplimientos en Español son : beso a usted las manos, ô viva mil años ; si estàn beviendo

y el uno bebe a la salud del otro, la respuesta es: Buen provècho cavallèro, ó buen provècho haga a usted, ó buen provecho le haga.

15. Todos los titulos de los quales la lengua Española se sirve son los siguientes: al rey, y reyna magestades; a los principes, altèzas; eminencias a los cardenales; al nuncio del papa, a los arzobispos, y obispos señoria ilustrissima, como hazian en tiempo de Christo y sus apostoles; a los grandes de España excelencia: señoria se dà a todos los titulos de España, como marqueses, condes, viscondes, a los consejeros de su majestad, a los secretarios del despacho, a los gentilhombres de cámara del rey, y al primèr camarero. Merced, se da a los alcaldes, abogados, y medicos: ay otro titulo que pertenèce solamente a los frayles que han ocupado algun oficio en su orden, ó religion, que es paternidad. El titulo de don, se da al rey y a toda la calidad, y eclesiasticos que han ocupado, ó ocupan alguna dignidad, y a todos los oficiales del exercito, empezando desde el Alferez, &c. y no como se acostumbra aora, que lo dan hasta los camareros privados, ó de gente de mas o menos, como don Luis, don Pedro, don Juan, &c. verificando se el refràn Español; quien te cùbre, te descùbre.

F I N.

*Les livres suivans à l'usage de la jeunesse se trouvent
chez J. NOURSE.*

LE NOUVEAU TESTAMENT DE NOTRE SEIGNEUR
JESUS CHRIST. Nouvelle édition, exactement
revuë sur le texte de M. MARTIN, par D. D. Min. de
la Savoye. 12mo.

AVANTURES DE TELEMAQUE FILS D'ULYSSE, par
FRANÇOIS DE SALIGNAC DE LA MOTHE FENELON,
avec un petit dictionnaire mythologique. Nouvelle édition,
revuë exactement sur toutes les précédentes, & corrigée
avec soin, & enrichie de figures en taille-douce. 12mo.
1756.

LES AVANTURES DE GIL BLAS DE SANTILLANE.
Par Monsieur le SAGE. Nouvelle édition, avec des figures.
4 Vol. 18°.

FABLES CHOISIES, à l'usage des enfans, & autres per-
sonnes qui commencent à apprendre la langue Françoisse,
avec un Index alphabetique de tous les mots contenus dans
ce livre, de leur signification propre en Anglois, & de leur
derivation grammaticale. Seconde Edition, in 12mo.
Price 1s. 6d. bound.

METHODE POUR APPRENDRE L'HISTOIRE RO-
MAINE, avec un chronologie des regnes des em-
pereurs, & un abrégé des coutumes des Romains. 12mo.
Price 2s.

EXERCICES FRANÇOIS ET ANGLOIS POUR LES
ENFANS, par M. D. DURAND. 12mo. Price 1s. 6d.

NOUVELLE METHODE POUR APPRENDRE A BIEN
LIRE ET A BIEN ORTHOGRAPHIER. En deux Parties.
Pour l'usage de son Altesse Royale la Princesse Louise.
Par JEAN PALAIRET.

LES VRAIS PRINCIPES DE LA LANGUE ANGLOISE;
Où se trouve developé tout ce qui est nécessaire aux étran-
gers pour apprendre facilement à parler, lire, et écrire
l'Anglois. Nouvelle Edition. Par V. J. PEYTON.

LA LITURGIE, ou Formulaire des Prières Publiques,
selon l'usage de l'Eglise Anglicane. Nouvelle Edition,
revuë & corrigée.

Books printed for J. Nourse.

MAGAZIN DES ENFANS, ou Dialogues entre une sage gouvernante & ses élèves de la première distinction, par Madame le Prince de Beaumont. 12mo.

MAGAZIN DES ADOLESCENTES, par la même. 4 Vol. 12mo.

LE DIABLE BOITEUX, par M. la SAGE. Nouvelle édition, avec des figures. 12mo.

THE CHILD'S GUIDE TO THE FRENCH TONGUE; containing,

I. A French Spelling-Book, digested in an Order entirely new;

II. French Rudiments; and,

III. A Vocabulary of Words most in Use, French and English; to which are added,

IV. Dialogues on the common Occurrences of Life, and on the first Principles of Astronomy and Geography. The whole adapted to the Capacities of Children.

A NEW SET OF EXERCISES, upon the various Parts of French Speech; calculated for the Use of such as are desirous of making French without the Help of any Grammar or Dictionary whatever.

NEW AND FAMILIAR PHRASES AND DIALOGUES in French and English, by Claudius Arnoux. The Third Edition. 12mo.

A SHORT TREATISE OF ARTS AND SCIENCES, in 8vo. by J. Palairé. The Third Edition.

A NEW GRAMMAR OF THE FRENCH TONGUE, by M. Rogissard, carefully revised and corrected by F. Lacombe. 12mo. 1757.

THE PRINCIPLES OF THE FRENCH TONGUE ABRIDGED, by M. Restaut, of the Parliament of Paris. To which are added, Exercises adapted to the Rules, by J. P. Le Camus. 12mo.

IDIOMS OF THE FRENCH AND ENGLISH TONGUE, by L. Chambaud.

THE GROUNDS OF THE FRENCH LANGUAGE, and the Difference between the English and French Idioms, by C. Arnoux. 12mo.



The following Books were all written by the late

THOMAS SIMPSON, F. R. S.

ELEMENTS OF GEOMETRY, with their Application to the Mensuration of Superficies and Solids, to the Determination of the MAXIMA and MINIMA of Geometrical Quantities, and to the Construction of a great Variety of Geometrical Problems. The Second Edition, greatly improved. Price 5s.

A TREATISE OF ALGEBRA, in 8vo. 2d Edition, much improved.

THE DOCTRINE AND APPLICATION OF FLUXIONS, 2 Vols. 8vo. 2d Edition.

SELECT EXERCISES for young Proficients in the Mathematicks. 8vo.

TRIGONOMETRY, PLANE AND SPHERICAL, with the Construction and Application of Logarithms. 8vo.

THE DOCTRINE of Annuities and Reversions, with useful Tables. 8vo.

ESSAYS on several curious and useful Subjects in mixed Mathematicks, in which are explained the difficult Problems of the First and Second Books of Newton's Principia. 4to.

DISSERTATIONS on a Variety of Physical and Analytical Subjects. 4to.

MISCELLANEOUS TRACTS on Mechanics, Physical Astronomy, and Speculative Mathematicks; wherein the Precession of the Equinox, the Nutation of the Earth's Axis, and the Motion of the Moon in her Orbit, are determined. 4to.

